

# The Revelation of the Lost Keys

by Kevin "the NorthWest"

---

## CONTENTS

### Prologue

#### Section I - The Lost Keys Trek

Chapter 1 - The Unveilings of God

Chapter 2 - Joe Flores & 1983

Chapter 3 - ELEVEN AT ELDEN HALL

Chapter 4 - A Picture Paints A Thousand Words

Chapter 5 - Does Hell Have Armies?? You Bet!

Chapter 6 - The God-Men

Chapter 7 - Back In Time: My Visit To The Tabernacle of God and the New Jerusalem!

Chapter 8 - A Hopeless Search?

Chapter 9 - PARKER

Chapter 10 - How Good and How Pleasant

Chapter 11 - Three Biblical Passages: The Building, the Body and the Bride; 1st: Matthew 16:13-26

Chapter 12 - Psalm 133: From the Beard to the Hem of His Garments!

Chapter 13 - Concerning the Bride: Genesis 1 & 2 / Revelation 21 & 22: The Introduction and Conclusion of the Entire Bible

Chapter 14 - The Painting's Backdrop

Chapter 15 - Ron Gatrelle and the Fire Escape

Chapter 16 - Important Facts and Circumstances

Chapter 17 - Should a Follower of Jesus be the Spit-ee' or the Spit-er?

Chapter 18 - The Five-Day Trek: Here We Go!!!

Chapter 19 - Oh oh! The Gates Were Unlocked!

Chapter 20 - On Into the Darkness: Hades Gates Prevail; The Keys Get Lost!

Chapter 21 - The Mystery Revealed! The Keys! An Old Wineskin in a Rack! His Ways are NOT Our Ways!

Chapter 22 - HOW TO MAKE AND MAINTAIN A RELIGION

#### Section II. The Evangelism Trek

Chapter 23 - The Sacred Cow Today's Golden Calf

Chapter 24 - The Valley of the Dry Bones

#### Section III. Increased Light on God's Building

Chapter 25 - THE INTRIGUING COTTAGE: A must read!!!

#### Section IV. Increasing Light on the Body of Christ

Chapter 26 - THE FOOT WASHED-WASHING JOINT OF SUPPLY

## ADDENDUMS

[ADDENDUM 1 - Revivals in the Acts of the Apostles](#)

[ADDENDUM 2 - Our Western Mindset](#)

[ADDENDUM 3 - PROPER PRACTICES; PROPER CONTAINERS](#)

[ADDENDUM 4 - The Crux of the NT and Assembly Life.](#)

[A Vision of Christ](#)

---

## BACK TO STARTUP

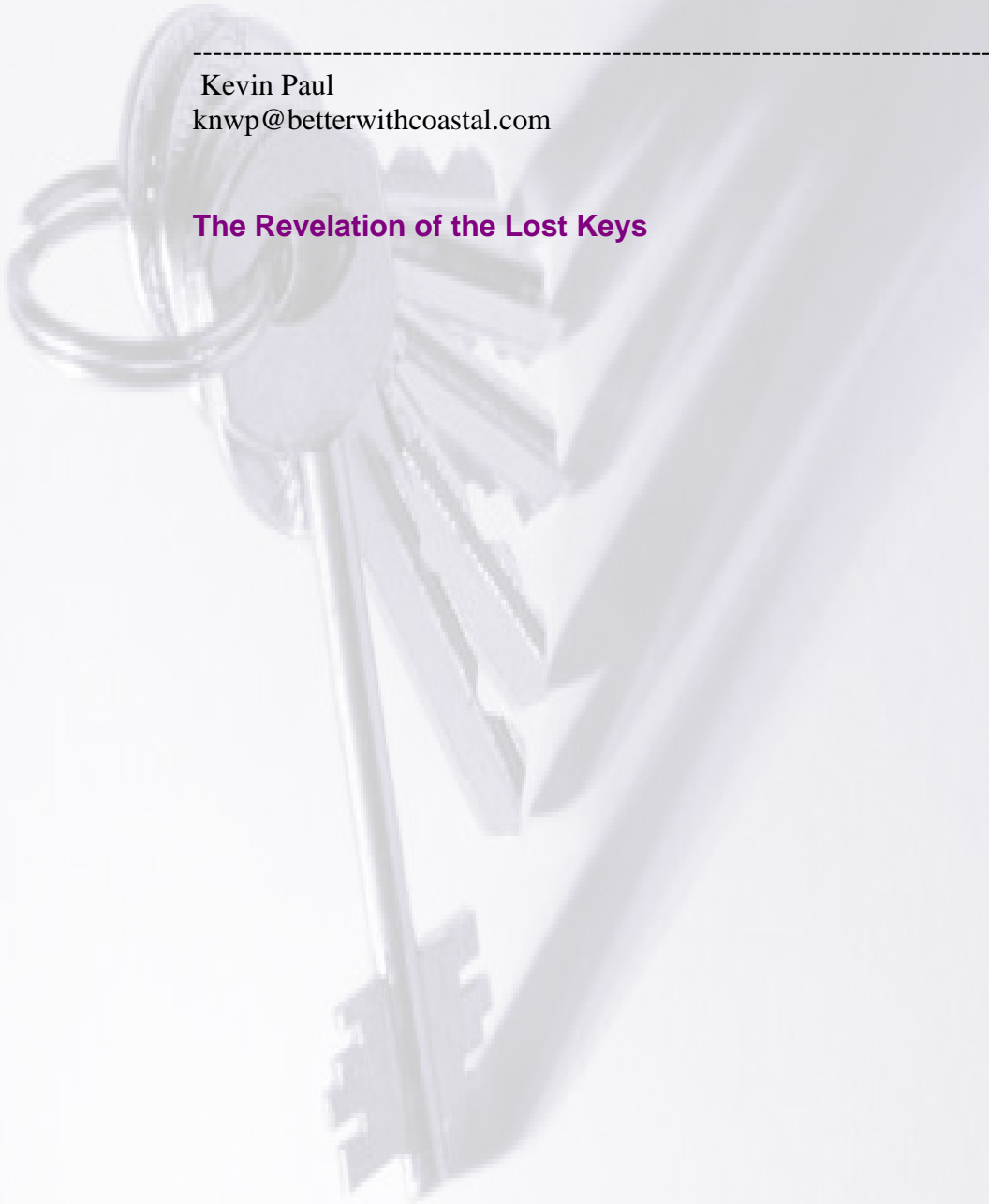
---

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

---

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com

**The Revelation of the Lost Keys**



## The Revelation of the Lost Keys

### Prologue

It was called a Buffalo. It was a machine used to cut metal. Being newly assigned as a non-rated Fireman in the U.S. Navy I was determined to work with metal in the Hull Technician rating. My first assignment for this type of work onboard the Naval Ship, USS Holland AS-32, was in shop 11A, the ship-fitter shop. The place? Charleston, South Carolina, which was one of the first states of the Union with quite a history.

Being a young sailor just starting out in the Navy, naturally I wanted to learn. A fellow ship-mate taught me concerning one of the most important machines in our shop: the Buffalo. It could cut angle iron, flat bar and even different kinds of channel metal for fit-up purposes in preparation for welding or whatever would be needed for various fabrications or shipboard hull alterations. There were many dangers to this Buffalo outfit. If you get something caught in between the works by stepping on the foot pedal by accident then you could lose a digit or something terrible.

One day he shared with me how he stepped on the pedal by accident at a time when he did not mean to and that part of the finger material of his glove which was on his hand at the time got cut off and he actually panicked thinking his finger may have been cut off. His body short-circuited! Next reaction? He passed out cold on the deck. When he came to he looked at his holed glove finger tip and removed his glove to find out that his finger was just fine! It was all just in his head. But could you blame the guy? His was just a normal human reaction.

A few weeks before this I had visited a chapel on base property and being that I had a knack for music I often would get the itch to play the piano as it is an expression of my personality. On this particular occasion I played and sang for hours. Maybe it was two or three.

Some few months later I had a dream one night about the Buffalo. In the dream I cut off my right hand in the Buffalo and was left with a stub. But I did not so much notice the stub but rather it was lack of the hand or the fact of being without it that bothered me. Of course it was not a reaction such as my shipmate had when he had been awake and it being so sudden and all. Mine was the reaction of someone who had been asleep. It was not the effect of shock from gore of blood or pain or panic that I felt because I had no pain and saw no blood. So what did I feel? Mostly emptiness. There was also somewhat frustration. Why? Because the main way I express "me" was cut away from me. I felt ripped off. (Hello, I guess that would be a literal rip off, huh!?)..... I felt uselessness. ....Like there was less meaning in my life. It was isolation under a pallor of confusion and depression. Why? Because the right hand is the main hand for playing the piano as it usually does the most work and usually holds the melody line. There were so

many emotions I have that are expressed seemingly no other way. So I guess the emptiness and pain I felt was the secondary kind a person would feel not the primary reaction. Of course what I'm speaking of is the more long lasting type. Truly our bodies are for expressing ourselves as to what is within to come forth in life.

Then I awoke. My senses? They were not dull, but they were down as to the emotions. As I awoke I even more fully realized the pain and the depression of such a loss. I mean the permanent type pain, not just the temporary, first reaction. It was then I sat up in bed and sadly looked down at my hand but was glad to find it was there in real life but I still felt the sadness from the dream. It was then I felt even sadder at the prospect of being without that hand than in the dream and was really sinking into my depressing feelings of emptiness and lack of fulfillment. THEN ..... the Lord spoke to me: "Now, .. how do you think I feel?" Suddenly I was in horror as I tried to recoil as much as possible from the emotions I was feeling at the time! I realized just Who it was Who was speaking with me and the fact that His Body is much more divided even though in another sense it never can be. It seemed I was being brought into a great Heart of pain that was just endlessly beyond my comprehension of what pain even is!! I answered Him: "Lord, I can not even begin to conceive of how You feel."

You say you love the Lord Jesus Christ. Do you really? Do you really even know what that means? The Scriptures tell us in Ephesians 1:23 that the ecclesia (which is a better word than the archaic traditional word "church," which was coined in the King James age from man's political cultural mindset of those times. Also it is of Roman pagan sources) is His Body which is the fullness of Him that fills all in all. If you really care about another person you will care about whether or not they are really happy or pleased. In other words are they fulfilled? Do you think the Lord could be fulfilled when His very Body which is His fullness (the Greek meaning of this word is overflow or expression! Same as what my dream conveyed or rather conveyed the opposite thereof) is divided so much that the Head cannot even send forth a normal signal and be able to reach out to the dying? Much less express what kind of wonderful loving and living is resident within Him? His expression and His channel to shine forth and reveal Himself to mankind is negated, divided, thwarted and maimed. It's frustrated.

You tell me you're on fire and you want to go all the way with Jesus Christ!

You tell me you've surrendered all and laid it all on the altar at the Master's feet!

You tell me you would go anywhere, do anything and suffer anything to be in the center of His will!

You tell me you want to go all the way with the Lord no matter what!



You tell me you want everything God has for you and you don't want to miss out on anything!

Well, good for you!! Poor God!!!!!! Does anyone even care what it is that fulfills Him? Do you even know? But if you're following Him just for what you can get out of it or just to get your needs met, guess what? You've joined the wrong army! I have no intention of gaining anything by writing this book except maybe to please the Lord's heart maybe just a little! I'm not writing this to please man and I don't care whether or not some Pharisaical hypocrites' opinions get offended as a result of my crossing against the grain of today's self centered, man centered gospel mindset which only has one concern: to meet the needs of flesh and blood forgetting the needs of the Lord Himself!!! You say with your mouth "not my will but Yours, Lord" and you say you love Him and want to be with Him but does that include making Him happy or frustrated and miserable???? Maybe He would appreciate someone just taking the time to sympathize with Him and listen to Him and really love Him. So many of us are like the wife who bustles around the house doing doing things for her husband (?? herself maybe?) and then some of us are even more foolish and bow down to the ground. Now what if this woman after wearying her poor husband by doing ten million tasks then came to him and threw herself at his feet on the ground and said "you are so wonderful, my big big husband, how I adore you!" He would say "Silly woman! Get up off the ground and just give me a kiss!" Do you really love the Lord Jesus Christ? Then give Him what He wants, what He really wants!! He wants HIS HER!! And she is real. She is going to marry the Eternal Lamb. And She is a real person!!!! And you are NOT that person! BUT you are part of her! Or should I say that that within you which is of the born again new creation DNA life of God is part of her and only that. There is nothing in her, which has or ever had anything to with the old creation.

Well, my friend, now if you made it this far through my prologue and preview of things to come and are still reading this without being offended and stumbled by the offense of the cross, then do not stop! If you really love Him and really want to know the truth of what will bring fulfillment to HIS HEART and tender blessedness to HIM and not just you then know this: God has an eternal purpose. And He planned this plan to fulfill this purpose because He has a strong deep and very passionate heart's desire. There is no one alive (unless they've already gone insane) who does not have a dream that they want to be fulfilled, even if they think it could never happen. Now why should God be any different? Were you not made in His image? Then if you want to know and even feel things from HIS heart and His perspective and His insight then read on. Why? Because this concerns His purpose not mere man's purposes being accomplished and are direct revelations of how that can be carried out and how the tracks can really be laid for it to happen. Why not be a part of His dream?

What is the goal of this book? To help the reader to get positioned or at least travel towards that destination where God can more easily bring you to the place where He can give you a revelation of His heart's desire by bringing you into His very heart. It is that you might actually experience the deep longings He has to the point where you feel what HE feels because you see what He sees: ..... through His eyes! Now I doubt if this book will DO much of that for you but certainly it will head you in the right direction. To be brought into actually drinking deep into the heart of your Lord concerning His heart's desires and to be involved with what HE is going after (not what some denominational district supervisor is going after!) I would recommend "The Divine Romance" by Gene Edwards. I will not lie to you: that is a far greater book than this one and deals with the very heart of the matter of God's heart. On what HE wants! I recommend that book to you no matter what.

I have called this book the most important revelation ever given to a man in the 20th century. Not the highest! Not the greatest! Not the deepest. Not the best. Now that sounds like quite a boast but read on and you'll have to agree its true unless the enemy of your soul has pulled the wool over your eyes and you still remain veiled in the outer court. Notice I didn't say "the greatest revelation" Now that would be ludicrous when I've lived in the same century as such men as T. Austin Sparks, Watchman Nee, Bahkt Singh, especially Witness Lee, Prem Pradham and Gene Edwards! Also notice I did not say I am the most important or greatest man because of this. No, I was just a guy who was at the right place, space and time for the Lord to be able to reveal something of such grave, serious importance to His heart and it is His Spirit that bids me to write. Now I will admit that I'm acquainted enough with some of their ministry to be able to stand on their shoulders and see more somewhat (with foggier vision). But I think that the reason I had this experience, and not someone else, was just that it was a circumstantial experience: the circumstances were right at the right place and the right time.

You've probably guessed by now that I'm not much of a friend to today's Christianity. Wow! You've got some insight into my personality! You probably think I'm just a little too hot. Actually not hot enough! I'm burning (don't worry its under the spirit's control!) and that's not enough! You ask why are you not the friend of today's brand of Americanized Christianity? Why should I be? What kind of world do we live in? Leonard Ravenhill once said "As the church goes so goes the world." Oops! The Christians today must be doing something wrong. Well maybe you've guessed I'm just an enraged person having been hurt in the past. Actually that is not so. Anger based on seeing reality is never merely based on past experiences, but rather it is based on seeing that Christians today are missing out on SO MUCH of the wealth of our Lord which the world does not even have a clue that these spiritual things exist. Hey! You're under arrest! Christians today don't even know they exist! You probably don't even have the foggiest idea of what I'm talking about when I mention the unsearchable riches of Christ! Maybe some have tasted a few crumbs from the Lord's table by accident. (By the way if any of my Pentecostal friends and brothers out there are reading this: you are probably thinking "Oh yes I have! I know what those things are." Well you Pentecostals are probably THE most deceived into thinking you have got a corner on Jesus Christ and much of experience of Him and are the most proud [yes, I said PROUD!] among today's believers! Believe me,

you have hardly even scratched the surface of the things of God !!! Hey, it's not your fault! You've never even been told how to enter in!) So what are some of the major culprits besides vast ignorance (what do you mean? In such an enlightened age as this?? Yep! You heard what I said.) You'll probably say aren't YOU so proud to set yourself up to say such things? Do not mistake pride for mere anger. Paul wrote "be ye angry and sin not." If I held the truth within and did not cry out when bidden to do so by the Head of the House, I would not be merely sinning, I would be a brat! But brother Kevin, should you not be more kind and loving in the way you speak? Do you mean I should be a man pleaser like the politicians to win votes? **TO BE POLITE IS POLITICAL BUT I WOULD RATHER SHOW THE LOVE AND REAL KINDNESS IN THE WAY JOHN THE BAPTIST DID TO HIS LISTENERS!** He shouted at them to wake them from death by burying their hopeless carcasses in the water in order to cause them to realize that the only hope is in the resurrection life which is Christ through the new birth and continuing on in that realm and that realm alone!! Thank God He is not as unintelligent as at least half of ministers today who think there is hope for that which comes from the old birth and old creation and who try to fix that ugly dead thing!!! Or do some of them merely try to use methods, traditions and programs from that old origin to benefit the new origin? How ridiculous! And here I will start to address our real problem: Jesus said "full well you make the Word of God of none effect by your traditions. Today's so-called "church" practices make probably more than 85% (who really knows??) of the riches and experiences recorded as having belonged to and being real to the first century Christians of none effect to us because we are clogging the channel of God's blessings to us and a lost world by our "so called Biblical" (really un-Biblical) practices and so make the promises and overflowing of the Spirit to us a non-reality or else a leaking reality. Fact is: we are not being classified for the most part as the first century Christians could be as those who turned the world upside down!! And for the few times and persons who did fall into that category in times since then the revivals and outpourings did not last because the new wine cannot contain for long in the old dead traditional pagan religious Babylonian wineskins that come from the source of man instead of God! (See ADDENDUM 1 )How can one withhold the most scathing rebuke from this situation and be at peace within his own conscience? It must be that something has blinded our eyes and dulled our senses so that we cannot see. What kind of an age do we live in that creates such a stupor in the minds of men that we cannot even sense the need and the cry of God's heart?

Of course you think I am being a little too harsh. If you will read and understand the rest of this book you will know I am probably being too mild! The wounded, bleeding, weeping searching HEART at the center of this universe and beyond our universe and all realms bids me to cry out !!

Let the courageous heart read on.

---



---

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

---

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
The Revelation of the Lost Keys





## Section I: The Lost Keys Trek

### Chapter 1

#### The Unveilings of God

There have been many ways through Biblical history and beyond through which God has chosen to unveil Himself and reveal aspects of His character personality and work through the centuries. Although one must be careful and test out the source to make sure it was God and not the "other guy" by comparing it with the scripture and all the other tests as revealed therein, there have been and still are many means He chooses to unveil His mysteries to His creatures.

God's final and greatest and all encompassing revelation (or in this case Revelation) of Himself was and still is THE WORD. That revelation was consummated through many historical and yet spiritual events that consummated in the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of Jesus Christ, the life giving, sevenfold intensified Spirit of the processed Triune God Who also is a man space time man. He is the perfect mingling of deity and humanity. To begin with, He, by various processes, brought God into man and then man into God and so finalized through His incarnation, human living, all inclusive death, resurrection, ascension and glorification the new covenant (of which bequests we have in written form). He transformed the promises of God into bequests that already belong to those who are thus joined to Christ's life and nature by faith. The Word became flesh so joining two natures in One Person and so the ultimate Revelation of God Himself is the Lord Jesus Christ and HE is God's final Word and there can be nothing added to this Word. HOWEVER, the WORD Who is the Lord Jesus Christ Himself as the ultimate revelation and outshining of God the Father has to be communicated to humanity through many means and as the writer of Hebrews reveals to us in the first chapter: 1 God having spoken in many parts and in many ways formerly to the fathers in the prophets, 2 at the end of these days has spoken to us in [the person of the] Son, whom he has established heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; ..... the words "in Son" reveal that God's final Word IS His Son. However, the need was seen by the Lord for the canon of the New Testament scriptures to convey this reality of His Son to us. Of course if you believe this New Testament that you read it authenticates also the Old Testament as being the written scriptures even as Peter in his epistle authenticates the writings of Paul of Tarsus as being scripture. Even the verses above also reveal that God spoke in many "parts and many ways.... in the prophets," . This must include dreams, visions and other means.

What about visions and dreams, etc., in this age of grace? Does God and will He continue to use such things to open the New Testament to open the ultimate revelation of God the WORD Himself so as to communicate Him to and into us? You bet! This is revealed in

Joel the prophet (2:27-29). Peter confirms this as being applicable to the New Testament age in Acts ch. 2.

Of all the things spoken both in the New Testament and Old by the law, prophets, Psalms, gospels or epistles whether they were conveyed to men of God by visions, dreams, revelations or direct visitations it seems to me that more of Christ is conveyed by allegory or pictures than any other means. A big example of this is the instructions made to Moses by direct visitation concerning the blueprint of both the materials and construction of the Tabernacle in the wilderness. Now THAT was quite a revelation of Christ! Don't you think? Not only of Christ but the boards built together around such holy representations of His aspects, relations and unsearchable riches to us convey US as the extension of His very being for the expression of His glory as His Body! What a revelation! And it is all written down in the Old Testament! I personally have seen (but do not presently know who all the authors are) at least 4 books written that are almost 2 inches thick! They are big books!! They concern the subject of this tabernacle and they are trying to barely scratch the surface of the unsearchable significances of all Christ is to us and everything this picture could mean. There are many such pictures of Christ in the Old Testament.

In 1983-1984 there were a series of events in my life. They were so unusual in their coincidence and setting and having come to such a person as myself who was under such an anointing of certain New Testament truths at that time as to properly understand what was being conveyed .... Well!!! I see now that it could not have happened in another time or another place or to anyone else and so the Divine Spirit bids me write. Of course you will find nothing here that fails the test of being in accordance with the scripture. But rather it not only reveals the deep inner meaning of some of the things in God's heart that are precious to Him concerning His people but reveals some of the ways He views us as His children.

Of course I have received things before and since from the Lord and share many of them in this book but THIS revelation is a PICTURE!!! And as has been said: " a picture paints a thousand words. So you see God can reveal more through a picture than through 10 books and that's why there are many such revelations in the scriptures.

A picture has a background. Sometimes it is only a white boring canvas or contains just grass or a sky which may be a sunset of many colors or possibly just a bleak sky. But of course that is not the main subject is it? Or is it? Some subjects may contain as mine does quite a bleak sky but hold on to your eyelids! The bleak sky will become a dark sky as a backdrop for an exciting story! If you'll bear through some of the necessary boring facts of the backdrop then maybe .... Just maybe you'll see into the very heart of God!!

The saga continues!

---

---

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

---

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
The Revelation of the Lost Keys



## Chapter 2

Joe Flores & 1983

His name was Joe Flores. He was one of the most unique cases of a changed life I have seen. I only knew him after his conversion but his story is one of amazing grace how sweet the change of a life. The world looks upon glory as rags to riches but to everyone who understood the story of Joe Flores, glory was seen far more in riches to rags. When I met him he was a poor man.

But what about before his conversion? He was a drug pusher. He had four houses and one of them was located in Beverly Hills. The only house that I saw of the four was the one he had started payments on for his mom but at the time I saw it even that one was being fore closed on and eventually his mom lost it.

He had all the women he could ever want. He was rolling in money. Had the drugs he wanted and on and on. What more could a man want? What could stop such a life in its tracks and turn him so drastically into such a drastically different path - the path of a street preacher who wouldn't quit preaching for anybody? Jesus! Plain and simple. The Lord Jesus appeared to Joe in his room one night. The Lord never said a word to Joe that night. He didn't have to: the expression of grief on His face out of His heart of love and compassion was all it took to arrest Joe. Not long after this someone shared the faith of Christ with him and not long after he was re born of Spirit from above was set aflame with love for his Lord.

Rivers of living water began to flow within him and people began to be saved from his street preaching right and left! He spent his time mainly preaching on the streets of San Fernando, CA. Set aflame for God. I was one of the older brothers in the Lord that he respected and learned from and I taught him some of the things of God and ministry but then he surpassed me in the area of evangelism being he was a single brother and was given over to it. But I mention all of this only because it pertains to my story. Things that happened at his house.

These events must be understood within the context of the Reagan administration. My wife and I lived in the Los Angeles area. We had just been married a little over a year. It was tough times because of unemployment during those days. To top it off we lived in an area of the country that was one of the hardest hit by Reaganomics at that time: Los Angeles with an 11.5% unemployment rate.

During these rough times we went to stay with Joe for awhile. His house with the Spanish style roof was huge with plenty of room. At the time we moved in the house was the



only one of the 4 he had left and even though he had got it for his mom it was being fore closed on. Joe had for a time gone to the same church (Evangelism Today Out reach started by Paul Whitcomb) I had gone to and both of us had left it under different circumstances. You see, so many times when there is real fire in a man those of the "leadership" sometimes feel threatened so they try to squelch it. Big mistake! And in Joe's case ... well, he just up and left. About the same time frame I was at Joe's house and finally got to reading a book God had tried once before to put in front of my face (when I was laid flat on my back for a time) but I had paid attention to the TV instead. Such a shame! That's one reason I don't have one in my house anymore. It's too much of a waste of time.

What was the book? It was by Watchman Nee. Its title was "Further Talks On the Church Life." Much of its content concerns the problem of unity and what Biblical unity is as opposed to what man's mere opinion or thought concerning the subject might be. If you hear me quote any scripture more than any other it is this: "My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are My ways your ways." In that revolutionary book (which I have to honestly recommend by the way) Watchman proves according to the Bible that New Testament unity is LOCAL. In other words the singular form of the word "ecclesia" always referred to an group (or many groups meeting in many homes!!!) of believers who lived within the bounds of a city, town, village etc. etc. The plural word? Always a group comprising a group that included people from more than one city, town, village or "locality." A province did not qualify as a locality as can be plainly seen in Galatians chapter one where Paul speaks to the "Galatians" --- that is not the same as the Corinthians as Corinth was a city so Paul said the "ecclesia" that is in Corinth but to Galatia it was the "ecclesias" plural as Galatia was not a city but a huge province with many cities.

Well finally the truth of what Christian unity was according to God's Word and God's thought and not just my thought or yours hit me full force and I realized that if you take all the names of all the Christians in the world and put that list next to the list of which cities or towns they all live in **THEY DO NOT HAVE A CHOICE ACCORDING TO THE WORD OF GOD AS TO WHICH ECCLESIA THEY BELONG TO. IT HAS BEEN ESTABLISHED ACCORDING TO THE SCRIPTURES A LONG TIME AGO THAT THOSE BELIEVERS WHO LIVE IN THE SAME LOCALITY BELONG TOGETHER WHETHER THEY LIKE IT OR NOT IN THE SAME ASSEMBLY AND THAT IS BIBLICAL UNITY!!!!!!!** Well when you put it that way it seems God did not give us a choice (heeee-lllo! Wake up and smell the coffee!), **BUT** when you look around you in this confusing mess we Christians find ourselves in today it seems there are many choices or differing kinds of meetings to choose from. And how can you be one with all the different believers in the city where you live? That is impossible. It is also impossible these days to maintain fellowship with all believers even in such a practical situation as a locality because there are so many different divisions among the children of God. The 4th Chapter in Watchman Nee's book on the 5 different kinds of unity in existence really hit me hard and has hit many others these last **75** years since it was written. Anyway to put it in short Nee basically states the only concepts of unity that really exist.

1. Congregational: namely that each congregation of believers must maintain their own unity amongst themselves. The problem with this is that you can splinter in one city as many times as you like and there is no restriction. (Hello, wake up and realize what world you are living in! It is happening lawlessly with no restrictions and it is spiritual fornication: **THE LORD ONLY HAS ONE BRIDE! NOT 10,000!**) Of course this unity is contrary to the New Testament as it is smaller than the scriptural unit for an assembly and that is their locality which is the town, city or village.

2. Worldwide unity. This is the meaning of the word Catholic. It is true in one sense. That is that there is only one Catholic or the synonym word Universal Body of Christ in the whole, not just world, but universe and that includes all times and all places. (so for believers to talk of a "body" that meets here or this "body" or that "body" is sheer nonsense as talked by those who don't know what they are talking and about and prove to all who hear them that they have never had a revelation of the Body of Christ. The problem with the Catholics (besides their false doctrines and abominable idolatries) is that they forgot the word "ecclesias" ("churches") in the PLURAL. This plural does not mean the universal one Body of the one Head Who is our Lord is divided but that there is a practical separation for practical purposes of fellowship (not that we should not travel outside and beyond our localities for further fellowship : in fact you will see this many times in the Bible. You can see plainly that this unity is **BIGGER** than the scriptural boundary which is the city, not the universe, county congregation or world.

3. National unity. When the reformation under Martin Luther and others started in the 1500's or that about time frame the first break off from the Catholic monstrosity was into The German Lutheran, the Dutch Reformed, the English Anglican churches, etc. These were national churches with a National government --- in fact the Anglican churches head was considered to be the Queen of England, etc. This is still wrong. It is still larger than the scriptural boundary of a locality.

4. Local unity. This is the true Biblical version of unity, like it or not. And you probably won't!! **BUT**, you'll grow in Christ a lot faster than you ever will any other way! I will not go into the references too much at this time but if you'll study the **BIBLE NOT SOME PHARISEE'S** concept and doctrine of man or side wall interpretation you'll find to your shock and amazement that the only kind of assembly that can ever even anywhere anyhow any size etc. etc. etc. any way shape or form be found anywhere in the scriptures were local and **ONLY** local. In every reference to the Greek word for what we call "church" that is in the singular in **EVERY** instance was referring to an assembly in a particular city and every instance where it was plural was referring to an area that was larger than the border or boundary of a locality. Anyway, you'll find that when the Lord told John to write to 7 assemblies in Rev. Ch. 1

5. There's one more concept but Watchman Nee didn't deal with it in that chapter but in the same book in a later chapter. It's the concept of "house-churches" being assemblies. It may be true that apostles started meetings in houses and it may have been one main house where they met at first **BUT** a house is **NOT** the boundary of a N.T. assembly or there could be even **MORE** divisions than the denominations (notice that word "nations" in

there - hmmm. It must be something of the world) have! This would mean the so-called "house church movement" of today could wind up being more divisive than anything else! In some ways this element is in some of their groups.

Back to the story. I HAD to leave the "church" I was in because it was a division. So some say today: "if you leave these divisions you are just more divisive and making just one more division." But, as I have said before, it is impossible to be with ALL the children of God in this day and age because the divisions already exist. In fact, 99.99% of us were born again inside of the walls of one of these divisions which these days are almost endless. So you have to divide from them to be obedient to God. Maybe you'll see Christians at work or next door who go to other denominations and free groups and have opportunity to fellowship with them as much as possible, but you are not going to have the practical fellowship or as much fellowship with them as God meant for you to have. The point is I must obey God and be one with Him even if that means dividing from everyone else in the whole universe!!! God says there is one assembly of believers for every one city or locality. I must say amen to Him and meet on that basis and on that basis alone! Enough said.

So here I was for the first time outside the organized church but I was at Joe's house and there was so much life and prayer and worship happening etc. that many young believers were being attracted to that house. One day Joe and I were fellowshiping and got into the subject of how we do things differently than they did it in the book of Acts and wondered what would happen if we tried to do some things the way they did! One of the things we had found was that we were one Body and that that one Body was one bread and that they partook of this bread (Christ in us!) daily and even broke bread (communion?) daily from house to house in Acts ch. 2. Of course the NT seems to depart from that practice later and make it once a week etc. but why not try it? (I have not since that time but it would still be interesting.)

So in that old stucco Spanish style house with about 7 or 8 of us we broke bread there and passed around the grape juice. We had a time of silence for repentance and heart searching and I then introduced a practice, which I had learned from the local churches I had visited (started by Witness Lee in this country, which I will get into in the next chapter) of taking the cup of salvation by calling upon the name of the Lord. Well this communion daily and calling upon the name started a revival in that house. Even Joe, who was a fire ball needed it. If you have never tried it, (calling "Oh. Lord Jesus" try it. You'll be refreshed, revived and filled but don't stay in these mere shallows: there are oceans of depths of experiences of Christ for you to discover! Of course the basis of that experience must always be maintained just as you must always drink water. Calling is drinking! I will take the cup! And Call!) try it! The scripture says "no man can say "Lord Jesus" except in the Spirit!" It is the fastest way of getting into instant contact with Him.

This was the start of much fellowship and experiencing of the sweetness of Christ in deep communion with Him in that house and many came to Joe there. Me? Joe came to me. But my unemployment situation was such a problem I didn't spend as much time as I would have liked. However, what a blessing to watch! It had its impact on my life.



Joe testified that the daily communion and heart searching confession of sin took the monkey off his back and freed him from the nagging temptation to take Cocaine! The temptation was far far gone!

One day, however, I went to him and tried to share what I had been discovering about the boundary of locality concerning how we should take the stand in San Fernando (where Joe and I lived) of being "the assembly in San Fernando" as no other Christians were doing it and I believed it would bring further blessing. He got mad! He would not accept this. He almost cussed me out and told me to leave him alone and get out of his house.

I have seen in years since that this way is the way of the cross. This is because there are so many who will not accept the restriction this puts upon them because they'd have to be with believers who are different members from themselves(hello!)! This brings many lessons of the cross as you cannot maintain your "group flavour" or "specialty". Rather there are many different members of Christ's Body with many different functions so HE can be expressed. HE is so special!!

Well!! .....That didn't last long. I had to move on. And Joe? He started some kind of church where they had communion every day and called it by a name (UN scriptural! DI-  
visive!) ...I think it was "The Church How you Knew it Should Be" or something like that, I can't remember and then I never heard much about him. He seemed to go no where .. but who knows?

..... life went on .....

---

---

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

---

---

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
The Revelation of the Lost Keys



## CHAPTER THREE

### ELEVEN AT ELDEN HALL

I think I was eleven when I was brought to Elden Street. Maybe I was twelve, but I think this took place in 1969; if so, I would've been twelve or thirteen as I was born in 1956. However it is a confirmed fact that I was eleven on the day we moved to Los Angeles in April of 1968, on the very day Martin Luther King Jr. was assassinated so I must have been older.

So what happened? Oh yeah, I was introduced to the local church for the first time. Of course since the term "local church" was brought to this country by Witness Lee, Christians around the globe use the term now to mean any so called "church" on any corner near to where you live and that's "local." Actually the original the term meant (and should still mean) the gathering of the Christians within a locality, who also live within that locality to be the assembly of the called out ones there.

Of course I was just a dumb kid of about 13 and didn't know all this. The meeting hall of the church in Los Angeles, which is exactly what those Christians called themselves there, was on Elden Street in Los Angeles. My Dad's good friend, Isabell Trudo, whom we had known in Syracuse, N.Y. where I had lived from 1962 till 1968, was in L. A. to visit her sister. Her sister attended the meetings at Elden Street. So because my dad had known and fellowshipped with this sister for years he went to see her and as a result we went to the meeting that Sunday evening.

I did not learn this until many years later but it was during those years (1969-1971) that there was an outpouring of the Holy Spirit at Elden street and I think I was brought to see that outpouring by the sovereign direction of the Lord of Hosts in 1969(so I guess I would have been about 12 years old). During that time from what I have heard most of the Christians there lived within blocks around that meeting place in a neighborhood and you could hear the praises and the calling on the name of the Lord and the singing from their homes and windows as they walked(!!! how could you beat that arrangement!) to the meeting and echoed back the praises and songs to those in their homes! Of course the meetings started in the homes and on the streets long before they ever got to the meeting place! No wonder they had revival! I think that in reality their meetings never had an end! Now THAT'S the way you and I should have the privilege of living! May the Lord bring back such a day to His people once again. If you read "Revolution" by Gene Edwards, he reveals that that's the way it was in Jerusalem when it all started and that's how God planned our lives to be. Wow! There was a three month period where young people poured into the assembly there and over 300 got saved! Just like that!

Now you have to realize that I had been to many many different kinds of churches as a boy because my father was a minister who preached at many different kinds of churches. He was a special kind of evangelist: one who knocked on doors to win the lost most of the days of his life. Most of his life he had a passion to go to the Jew first as he was a Jew (I guess that makes me half!) and had a burden for the salvation of the Jewish people. All

of the organizations he worked with during his life were missions to the unsaved Jewish people. As I said his main thrust was door to door, but to raise support and awareness he would visit many churches and preach to them and share the burden. But though I had seen all kinds of meetings of Christians and get togethers, I had not seen anything like this.

These Christians were alive !!! They were loud, bold, rich, deep, electrifying and aflame!!! I had never seen anything like them. And being young, of course, I was impressed. Were they Pentecostal? No!!!! A thousand times no! But they were even louder than Pentecostals! Yet not wild; they were completely under control. But the strangest thing was to me: all of them spoke. All of them testified, preached, exhorted, admonished, read scripture, called a song, or praised the Lord. Who was their pastor? I never did find out and of course young boy that I was, I never asked. Years later of course I knew that they did not have pastors or believe in them. They believed and seemed to practice the scripture as Paul wrote "every one of you hath a song, hath a teaching, hath a revelation, hath a tongue, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying" (Building up). Years later, I actually found there to be some real building up amongst these Christians. But back to the story! Hey! I was impressed at 12 or 13 years of age.

Of course, my impression was a lasting one, not just immediate. It was something eternal; part of what I was destined to see in my lifetime on earth. What had HAPPENED??? I visited one of the refreshing times of God's visitation that He has destined at certain times and places during the history of the age of grace. . . . I saw the Elden Street Revival. From what I gather in years since I walked into the beginning of that time of refreshing. It lasted about three solid years: 1969-1971.

Of course much of this was due to the ministry of Witness Lee, who had been the co-worker and #1 student of Watchman Nee in China, whose ministry and influence in Mainland China, both before and after the Bamboo Curtain fell, has influenced that country more than any other ministry ever has or probably ever will. There are literally millions (estimated at about 100,000,000 or more!!!) born again and in love with the Lord Jesus Christ as the result of this man literally laying down his life for His Lord.

So what was this meeting like? OK. A brother would get up and shout "Lord we love You!" and all 300 or 400 would resound in one accord "Amen!" Then another would pray a sentence and all would resound Amen! He'd pray another phrase and all would resound "Amen!" someone would call out a hymn and after singing it someone would shout out a line from averse of the hymn that impressed their spirit and all the sudden the Lord was knocking at the door of my heart! Of course sometimes 2 or 3 people would stand at the same time and loudly read a verse from the song (the truth and glory to the Lord's praise in the words of the song were so rich such as I had never heard before) and all would Amen again. Then someone would stand and testify and all would listen and later another song, then more verses of the song spoken out. In between all this at times all the attendants would say sometimes in unison sometimes not so much in unison "Oh, Lord Jesus!" or "Lord Jesus" or Oh Lord! Etc. Then, not following the song at all seemingly

but totally in line with what the Spirit was proclaiming about 3 or 4 brothers stood up and read Isaiah 9:6 in unison with a thunderous amen following. What I had never seen before was this what they call "popcorn meeting" where a brother stands up and functions in his gift then another stands up and functions in maybe an entirely different gift but in concert and in the flowing of the Spirit for that meeting. What I saw and experienced for the first time was people communicating the Lord Himself to one another through what is sometimes called "The release of the spirit." Here the human spirit of man, containing something of the Spirit of God like something of the Lord's glory, wisdom, honor or His righteousness, etc. seems to release that aspect of Christ and it builds not only individual lives but faith and hope and love towards our Lord corporately. Instead of sharing mere doctrine or teaching with one another they were literally sharing Christ Himself and presenting Him to one another!!

Later on they passed a plate with bread around as they were having what is known as "the Lord's Table" meeting that night. Then a big cup came around which kind of choked me cause it had real wine (they call it "communion wine") in it. Of course the singing at this point seemed to follow the theme of the Lord's death and resurrection. But what was really happening? They were sharing and eating the Christ they had experienced, got filled with and were overflowing with during that week or what ever and came together to pour out what was ready to burst from within! He could not be contained! He must overflow!

There was only one problem with all of this. I got a headache! Cause the guy behind me when they all said amen over and over had a sledgehammer voice that seemed to hit me in the back of the head over and over and .. well, ouch! But I was impressed.

That was my introduction to what some people call "the local church." Years later I learned that what they had been doing was pray-reading the scripture (the amen-ing can help or maybe not sometimes) and calling upon the name of the Lord(Oh, Lord Jesus, etc.) which are 2 practices which they do more than anything else. However, I would not say the first century Christians could read or even had Bibles!! So, is the local church practice the ultimate experience of the Lord!??? NO!! THERE IS ALWAYS MORE!!! But, c'mon! How you gonna tell a kid that? I would just say at this point in the story so far that as to their experience of Christ we must NEVER get stuck in a rut concerning ANY kind of practice and become inflexible. NEVER!

The conclusion I have come to in regard of having passed through what I have passed through on earth up to this point and especially in regard to this experience is this: there is a vast difference between today's evil, degenerated, insipid, dull, boring, supercilious, poor practice of the faith of Christ and that which was originally delivered to the saints by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ. There seems to be a vast canyon between the two. And it is this: it seems to me that when most Christians assemble together today most of them "come to receive" of the Lord and be ministered to. They come "empty, to be filled" so to speak. Paul's first letter to the Corinthians concerning their Body-Life experience reveals the opposite!! And that was written to the ecclesia that had the worst problems of any ecclesia that Paul ever wrote to: they did not come together with the priority of



receiving uppermost BUT GIVING out from their overflowing abundance of their wells of living water was their priority. THEY COULDN'T WAIT OR THEY WERE GONNA BURST AND BUST OUT WITH THE OVERFLOWING OF ETERNAL LIFE!!!!

-----

-----

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

-----

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
The Revelation of the Lost Keys





## Chapter 4

### A Picture Paints A Thousand Words

To paint a picture, there must first be a parchment. Then before you even see the main theme, the artist must create a background or backdrop for the main subject (unless you're as good as Norman Rockwell!). Well, this subject, God knows needs quite a background in this case to be properly understood or the main subject will not be seen. So the Lord took His time creating a backdrop in my life. Please read and consider these events so that the picture can be created to you! Then, maybe God will remove the veils and you will not just understand but see spiritually that which the Lord desires for you to see.

In the book of Acts we read how Peter received a vision concerning a sheet out of heaven filled with unclean fish, birds and beasts and a voice from the heavens saying "rise, Peter, kill and eat." And it was repeated three times. At first Peter spoke concerning this vision but it seems he did not repeat it much thereafter and got weak concerning the truth. As a result we see in Galatians chapters 1 & 2 how Paul had to rebuke Peter publicly concerning the same reality to his face. On the other hand Paul received a vision on the road to Damascus, hearing a voice saying "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute Me?" The "Me" in that statement was more than the individual Christ. Whom had Paul been persecuting? The "Me" included not only the Head but those connected to Him which were part of Him as the members of His Body. This is something Paul never forgot and he spoke of it often and remained strong as a result of speaking this out. This was why Paul could unflinchingly declare before a king though he was in chains "Whereupon, king Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision" ... Wow! There are actually 3 accounts of Paul sharing this vision publicly! This is why I will all my life continue to open my mouth and say as the 12 first said "we cannot but speak of the things, which we have seen and heard."

It was about five or six years after the visit with my parents to Elden Street the sovereignty of God brought me into contact with these dear saints of God once more. This time "the local church" or "church life" as they call it was brought to me instead of I being brought to it. I was about 17.

I had known Son Rocstroe from his having visited the Foursquare Church where I was attending at the time. They called him a "church hopper" because he went everywhere and they said he'd never settle down. Then one day he came in contact with "the Church in Los Angeles." Now it was the same group I had seen at Elden Street except you have to remember that I lived in San Fernando Valley in the city (?sector of LA??) of Sepulveda and the closest meeting hall as they called it where part of the church met (for Los Angeles even though such a huge city could only have one church and there were 3 meeting halls at that time.) was the next to Sepulveda in a place called Panorama City.

Brother Son was Vietnamese. He had a stump instead of a hand on his right arm and a long scar across his right cheek where a bullet skimmed the right side of his the right side of his head during the Vietnam war. The bullet, barely sparing him from death, instead went on into his hand and exploded it off into oblivion. He was blessed of God's sovereign wisdom and mercy to even be alive!

When Son found the church in Los Angeles he first off became an opposer to it! So zealous for the Lord was he that he preached against this group. I mean let's face it, Witness Lee preached things no one in this country (c'mon let's admit the truth guys! No one IN THIS WORLD!!!) had ever heard of before such as actually preaching on the Seven Spirits of God from Revelation. Hey! I want to go on record and testify that I've experienced the Seven Spirits which are the seven eyes of the Lamb of God, which are the seven lamps before the throne searching and burning within the depths of my heart within in the real church life and its NOT JUST A DOCTRINE! In Son's case, as in the case of many others, he had investigated the group and found that many negative things had been written concerning them. Actually, over 200 pieces of literature had been written defaming Witness Lee and the Christians gathered as a result of his ministry. To some of us smart people it is obvious that the devil is nervous about a group of people when he raises up so much opposition that obviously ridiculous but alas! Others of us don't have a clue as to what's going on and then there are some like Son who eventually figure it out. Me 3! I fit somewhere in there.

Finally one day the wandering stopped! Son met the Lord Jesus in a way he never had before and joined with the brothers in the church in LA for good! He suddenly became as one on fire! Ever since they always called him a burning brother. He had a light no one could ever put out.

Well it was soon after this that Son came to my house. I was still living with my parents and I think I had already entered College (must have been 1975) and of course my dad had told me that I needed to go out during the summer and get a job. Well it wasn't that easy so I did not have one yet. While I was just standing there in my room one day Son walked in and started talking with me.

I had been impressed by the life of "Praying Hyde" ---- John Hyde, a missionary in India at the turn of the previous century, who had literally caused a downpour of revival in that country due to his prevailing prayers. He was called the man who never slept. Son saw I was impressed with a man's individual spirituality but then told me: "You can have all that and more. I have found the answer." Well, I wasn't going to easily believe that but he pointed out that there was a serious amount of spiritual wealth to be had by being in what he called "church-life." When he told me what had happened to him I realized it was the same group I had met at Elden Street. Soon the topic of conversation turned to the matter of employment and as a side item to the whole topic of conversation it just happened that these brothers at the church there were gardeners and needed help! Well! There you go! So as a result I visited a meeting for the second time in my life.

They had what they called "brothers house" where I stayed the night and worked with one of the brothers the next day. It was hard work and over that summer I probably worked with many of them but that's not the main point. I got to see their meetings and how different they were from the Pentecostal meetings I was used to. I was in a Foursquare church during that time and was going to L.I.F.E. Bible College to study for "the ministry" so to me these meetings were as strange to me as my kind of Foursquare meetings would have been to a Baptist. (See the previous chapter for a description of local church meetings) After the meeting that night at the brothers house I was very impressed by one thing: their love for the Lord Jesus. They sang and sang at the house after the meeting and for awhile the sisters came over to the brothers' house for singing and I was especially impressed that they would sing using words from the Song of Songs. The songs were so rich in content that I believe they were beyond what I even understood at that time.

Some of this was due to the Bible insight that Brother Witness Lee had which was so deep wide and high and solidly based on real experiences with the Lord Himself. There exists a fact on this earth that no one wants to admit but many brothers in Christ on this earth have been and still are envious of brother Witness (and have lots of different ways of manifesting that envy!!) because his revelation of the Jesus Christ and the Word of God which he had. I won't need to comment much about this. If you read and understand the rest of this book you will see plainly what I mean. He was gifted with rare insight to say the least. And God used it to finally start actually building His Body once again on this earth.

I liked their deep spirituality but did not know why they did not speak in tongues (at least where I could hear it) and lay hands on people to heal them, etc.) but their love for the Lord impressed me and their grasp of the Bible was beyond what I was learning in Bible School in many ways, but it was their way of meeting as loud as it was and with so many "amens!" and such that was so different to me that it disturbed me and I thought it strange so while I was by myself in one of the rooms at the brothers house that night before going to sleep and before any of them had come in I asked the Lord: "Lord, their way of meeting, what is this? I don't like it. What do You think?" and to my surprise He said: "I like it!" and that was all! But what did I do? I still continued on in the Foursquare denomination and after that? Well, the story gets worse for awhile.

---

knwp@betterwithcoastal.com

---

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

---

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
The Revelation of the Lost Keys





## Chapter 5

Does Hell Have Armies?? You Bet!

In Charleston , South Carolina the armies of Satan flooded in on me like a hurricane storm. During that time I believe every evil angel and demon in the whole region of the state of South Carolina were there. You say "no way man!" "Why would something like that happen? Why would Satan be so interested in you? You're joking right?"

Nope! That's why if you are really going to get in true line with God you had better be prepared to pay a price and you better have a real revelation because **YOU WILL BE TESTED !!!!!!!** But hey? Why should God OR the devil test you or even mess with you if you're not either interesting or bothering them one or the other?

..... you'll see what I mean .....



## Chap. VI

### The God-Men

I had already been a graduate of L.I.F.E Bible College by the time I came across the book entitled "The God-Men." Written by Neil T. Duddy from The Spiritual Counterfeits project. Do not try to find it. It is an illegal book. Literally: It was condemned and taken off the market by court order and is a matter of the law that it can no longer be published or sold.

The book takes statements from Witness Lee's books (which are in a class by themselves by the way) and puts them together with his statements from other books of his totally out of context to mean something totally other than what the brother had even dreamed of ever saying! Not to mention besides this fact: there is the presence of a superhuman intelligence and line of reasoning beyond the normal human powers of argument which I discerned as being the handiwork of the snake right away upon first reading it. Even though I knew there was a Satanic origin in some of its passages, I was still poisoned by it and had very negative thoughts concerning that group of Christians. For a time, like Son Rockstroe (who's name was mentioned in that book by the way), I even preached against the group from the pulpit.

Only because I had been in some of their meetings and knew some of them personally did I realize that false statements were being made concerning them. The extent of the damage of that book wrought such havoc that many of them had suffered extremely. Kids were being ostracized at school, some of the brothers even lost their jobs and there were even cases of divorce etc. because they were conceived to be something they were not.

The book was proved libelous in a court of law. During the court case Witness Lee did not even use a lawyer, considering his hold upon reality so sharp that the opposing party didn't have a chance. Not even Satan's smarter brain had a chance! Witness had too much of a renewed mind! As to the right or wrong of taking brothers to court, well that will be tried in the next age, but the courts awarded damages in the amount of 11.5 million dollars to Witness Lee and the local churches.

What happened to the author of that book? Well, since the folks he worked with at Spiritual Counterfeits Project went bankrupt as a result of this court case, he fled to Switzerland to have some wealth left. But it seems he did not escape the judgment of God. His kids shortly thereafter got on drugs and he went mountain climbing, fell off the mountain and died!! And his body was never found! To this very day!

Even though I had read the book and it somewhat poisoned me (that was what kind of Satanic book it was) for a time, I had been among these believers. So I realized there were some lies involved but I can see that others reading it who knew nothing about the group could easily have been sold under the lie. It was said that they were a cult and

ungodly and something to avoid like the plague or you would get brainwashed and sucked in. Etc. etc. etc. Finally I began to realize that nobody attacks, attacks and attacks this much unless a big old DIABOLOS is behind it!! GOD surely does not use tactics of the type being used to destroy a group such as were being used by more than one group of people out there that were saying not only false things but poisonous things inspired of the old trickster himself. Now you answer me this question: WHY WOULD THE DEVIL BE SO NERVOUS????? WHAT KIND OF HELL, LITERALLY HAD GOTTEN INTO THAT VARMINT????????? Think about it, brother and sister in Christ!! Why in the world were there over 200 hundred pieces of literature being circulated and illegally being pushed off on people and put under their windshields and being printed with out authors' names etc. etc. ad nauseum? Many are just jealous of Witness Lee who I would rate as the # 1 Bible teacher of all time. He had insight into the deep mysteries of God in the Word like no one has ever had it seems except maybe the Lord Jesus Himself and Paul of Tarsus.

After a case and hearing that lasted about a year a just judge of this country awarded Witness Lee and the church in Anaheim with the case.



## Chapter VII

### Back In Time:

#### My Visit To The Tabernacle of God and the New Jerusalem!

Now I have to travel backwards to times past during my first year in L.I.F.E. Bible College as a freshman. These are things written in the eternal books of the things of God. HIS History: of events in another realm. That glorious day will never be forgotten.

One of my teachers in Bible College was Rev. Hackett. The class was on the Pentateuch, which are the first five books of Moses. These first five books of the Bible are so unbelievably rich concerning the precious things of Jesus Christ that the world could not contain a complete explanation of the aspects of His Person and His work therein. Of the revelations of Christ in the Pentateuch, none is greater than the tabernacle in the wilderness. The blueprint concerning the building of this tabernacle was given to Moses in Mount Sinai during a forty day fast. At that time he was so caught up into fellowship with the Blessed One that he neither ate nor drank for all forty days! At the close of that time the LORD spoke unto Moses and said; "See that you do all things according to the pattern which was shown to you on the mount."

Here we see that it took Moses 40 days and nights in which he did not even have time to eat or drink in order to receive: 1. The law, which is a figure of Christ's excellence. 2. The building plan for the Tabernacle: which is a type of Christ built together with us the living boards as His dwelling place and Body and 3. The ordaining and service of the priests, which represents our accessing God and service between Him and man as a holy priesthood in the New Testament which is the inheritance of all His holy ones, which are all Christians in every age.

Now if it took Moses that long just to receive the revelation of just types and shadows of the things of God, the things of Jesus Christ and the building up of the ecclesia which is His Body the fullness of Him which fills all in all, then how long should it take a man or woman of God today to receive before God a revelation of reality from which the types and shadows were only a representation??? This question has GOT to be asked! This leads to an even more important question and that is this: Is there anyone really truly qualified to be in the service of Christ today???? I would say hardly not! Now I wish to thank God for the men and women of God who serve Him night and day on the mission field and those through whom we have come to be born again and start our new lives in Christ but .....

**NOT!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!**



I FEEL LIKE A PRESSURE COOKER INSIDE ME IS ABOUT TO EXPLODE!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Most of the so-called men of God (wait a minute! Aren't ALL who are born again of God?

Why do we think that guys who stand on a platform above the rest of us are above their brethren and have some special power conferred on them as "men of God?" (Is it cause they wear a coat and tie?) we have today have never even known what it even means to be qualified for the service of the Lord Jesus Christ!!! Some of them are still babes in Christ! Some of them have grown a little more spiritually than the next Joe and are brats in Christ (please excuse such a term as that immature part of them is surely not from the new creation but rather the old). But did not Paul say the same thing to the Corinthians? It took God 40 days to give Moses just a type of the spiritual things and that was after 80 years of prior preparation of this vessel of mercy! It took the Lord Jesus 3 1/2 years to prepare the 12 and still they were not enough for the revelation of the New Testament. After the training of the twelve by the incarnated Son of the Most High in His flesh here was still the necessity felt in the Godhead to pick and train one: Saul of Tarsus and make him a Paul, a sent one, a pattern to all that believe by taking him aside into the deserts of Arabia for 3 years under the tutorship of the crucified, risen and ascended Christ in order to complete the revelation of the New Testament! He was the one who wrote half the New Testament. We have the same Christ today! BUT..... we don't think we have to relate to Him in the same way. 3 1/2 years = 20,000 hours in the presence of the living God!! Wow! 3 years = about 17143 hours in the presence of the same God except now He has been exalted to the right hand of God which is where Paul said he had a chance to visit once or twice, literally. NOW. You find me man today who has spent that long in the presence of the Lord and I'll listen to him! What about me? I cannot pretend to EVEN have spent that long in His presence if you combine my over 120 days of fasting and whole nights of prayer etc. It is necessary for a man to literally live in the presence of Christ and then like Peter in his 3 x denial the man must still be tested and found to be a humiliating failure!! Maybe Gene Edwards is such a person who has spent that long a time in the presence of Christ. I have found myself listening to that man. Hmmmm.....

If we take some time to look at the shadow of Jesus Christ and His Body that is seen in the Tabernacle in the wilderness revealed in the book of Exodus. This part of scripture gives us a tiny view as to the magnitude of what the revelations of the Reality of the things of God truly are.

A page of the textbook of the Pentateuch class first opened these things to me in 1975. There is a list of materials that the children of Israel were to bring in Exodus 25, the first part of the chapter: gold, silver, brass, blue purple, scarlet, fine linen, goats hair, Ram's skins dyed red, seal skins, acacia wood, oil for the light, spices for the anointing oil, spices for incense and finally onyx stones.

Notice that these things were a free-will offering of God's people. However, though they are material things that were offered, all these things are representatives of various aspects and relations of Christ and His unsearchable riches in relationship not only to us but to God the Father.

The following are the meanings of most of these things as proposed by the textbook given me in Bible school and most of these allegoric interpretations and denotations are commonly accepted and agreed upon by most but not all Bible scholars. These concepts have been arrived at mostly by comparing scripture with scripture throughout the Bible and finding that there are similarities of interpretations through scripture especially as you compare scripture with scripture.

1. Gold - Commonly held to denote in all Biblical passages the divine nature of God. The New Jerusalem is built with gold more than any other single element. We must be built up with His divine life and divine nature.
2. Silver - Used to buy back slaves. The meaning commonly accepted is Redemption. We were redeemed with quite a price from our slavery.
3. Brass - Judgement. There is almost no argument on this point amongst scholars. The sacrificial altar was built with brass and so were many other items of tearing, securing, binding, gathering the blood and etc.
4. Blue - Heavenly. This relates to Christ's heavenly glory.
5. Purple - Royalty: Christ's Kingship, Headship, Lordship and authority.
6. Scarlet - Denoting the blood of Christ in its various power and aspects toward God and man.
7. Fine linen - Fine twined linen denotes the purity and righteous nature of Christ and finely woven and innate intimately.
8. Goat's Hair - something of the outward ordinariness of the man Jesus within which was hidden the glories of the eternal. Isaiah says "He was as a root out of dry ground" and "there was no beauty that we should desire Him."
9. Ram's Skins Dyed Red - This is the covering before God of the justifying, cleansing and sanctifying blood of the Lamb by which we can enter the Dwelling Place of God and abide in his tabernacles under the shadow of the Almighty! Without the blood of Jesus, truly there is nothing! This would also have further meaning if we consider the story of how God shed the first blood sacrifice to cover Adam and Eve in the garden with God's righteousness or a symbol thereof.
10. Sealskins - This covering will keep out damaging worldly elements. (Rain, snow, burning sun ... etc. Surely this is a function of dwelling in the true building up together of God's holy ones! Another function is that it will keep the warmth in.
11. Acacia wood - this is a high and hardened, upgraded wood. In other words it is the humanity in the new creation. It is Christ's humanity in us making us all part of the one new man: "for as in Adam all die but in Christ shall we be made alive" Praise the Lord this making alive has already begun with in us and is proceeding on!
12. Oil for the Light - There seems to be no argument here at all. Oil is universally considered to mean the Holy Spirit and even several scriptures

actually tell the very same. The light referred to here, of course is the Lampstand. In Zechariah it is referred to as the Spirit, having One base but seven branches or lights. In Revelation of course there are the Seven Spirits of God but of course we could spend forever on that subject!

13. Spices For The Anointing Oil : These spices come from various plants mentioned in other parts of the Pentateuch and are types of various aspects of the riches and graces of our Lord's death and resurrection. This has to do with the Lord's work through His resurrection and ascension to work Himself into us empower us and bear fruit through us.

14. Spices for Incense: This is also the same oil but different spices for living not empowering and is toward God instead of toward man. This has to do with the processing of these aspects of His death-resurrection mid-process to process us into His image and likeness. This of course is for a fragrance towards God and contributes to intercession.

15. Onyx Stones: To be placed upon the breastplate of the high priest. Stones signify us as offspring of His life and constituents of the organism of the processed Triune God for His expression that He may be glorified. (It's all in I Peter ch. 2.) We don't metamorphosize from dust of the ground into transformed living precious stones over night. Consider petrified wood and consider how it gets the way it gets.

On that one glorious day I shall never forget I was considering this list of meanings from the textbook and decided to re-read Exodus 25,26 and 27 once again with these things in mind. I had read these same chapters before as I thought a Christian should read the whole Bible (yeah, right! Maybe ten years later). But, of course without the main keys which I have just given you, it would be impossible to get a clue as to what it might mean and as a result is exceedingly boring and will put you to sleep. But this time as I started to read, I noticed that these materials I had just studied about were unveiling things about Christ to me I had never known. I noticed that the arc inside the holy of holies was Christ as it was made of acacia wood and so there was the human but was inlaid and overlaid with gold which was the divine nature. As I got into the combinations of the materials together on the furnishings and the boards, entrances and other components of this dwelling place of God, the peace of God deep within me seemed to flow out like a gentle river. Soon I was engulfed in the presence of the Lord of hosts and that was but the beginning of things to come that most glorious day! Soon as I read the peaceful flowing within me also had a warmth and glow and the tears started to come to my eyes. The flowing within was distinctly golden like an endless golden cloud of glory. Except now I can no longer describe in the human language what this glory was like. Mere human words cannot convey even 1% of how wonderful our Lord Christ is. This golden cloud was of the inner nature and unlimited aspects and details of the Divine Being and contained insights beyond the mere thoughts or words of mortal finite man.

Now as I began to read the words on the pages of these Old Testament scriptures



became like flames of fire burning into my soul. There was more revelation of the New Testament revealed by these 3 OT chapters to my inner man in those four hours than I had ever seen in my whole life of reading the NT before. During those four hours I could sit up and read, yes, but other than that I could not move due to the fact that the power of God had me pinned to the chair where I was sitting.

I began to discover, like David, "that a day in Thy courts is better than a thousand" YES!!! Better than a thousand days anywhere else! I discovered in those hours that there was such a thing inside our Lord's being as "the tabernacles of God" as I seemed to be entering into golden courts of our Lord deeper and deeper into more glorious palaces and inner rooms of his Being and grace. In such times of course we are tempted to cry out as Peter did on the mount "Lord its good for us to be here. Let us make three tabernacles." But let us remember, beloved, that God has also ordained the dry times and the deserts and that real growth is wrought far more in those times than in the mountain tops. Let us remember that though Paul spent three days in both Paradise and the 3rd heavens that most of the three years of his aloneness with the Lord was in the desert and it was there he lived out Romans 7 and Romans 8.

Along with the experience of this golden flowing warmth of this golden cloud flowing within were some elements I will dare to speak of as the Spirit permits. The fine twined linen, heavenly blue, redemptive scarlet and royal purple of which Moses wrote are dim shadows and I was allowed to see into their realities. There is a beauty in the Being and glory of our Lord that we can only try to describe and somehow point others toward hoping the Lord would reveal just an inch of it to them! For if He would they would give up the world in an instant so glorious is He! But alas, there was a darkness to everything I saw as in this age we are only allowed to see through a glass darkly and not yet face to face. It was after about two hours in His courts that I began to notice that the boards built together in the tabernacle represented you and me! These boards were covered on both sides with gold corresponding to the only piece of furniture in the Tabernacle overlaid with gold both within and without and that was the arc of the covenant which is THE highest picture of Christ Himself as experienced in the holy of holies. It is this experience that will cause us to be built up into the Head of the ecclesia in ALL things that He might fill all in all and eventually Head up all of creation through us and so consummate the ages and fulfill the eternal purpose according to His heart's desire (which is His dear sweet lovely Bride of course!!). It was because the boards were overlaid on both sides that they could have golden rings attached also through which the long rod of gold (signifying the Spirit Who joins us as one) not only joined but aligned the boards with one another so God could have a Dwelling Place on this earth. When Moses finished the Tabernacle exactly according (and you didn't think exactly was very important!!) to the blueprint given to him on the mount, then we see in Exodus 40 that the glory of God so filled the tabernacle that not even the priests could enter to minister (and you thought



your ministry was so important!!!). This shows us that that which is flesh must be crossed out at the altar before the entrance and building up into the tabernacle of God is gained.

It was at this point after about two hours that I realized that not only Christ is this resurrected and exalted humanity mingled with the divine nature but also WE constitute (eventually sooner or later) both the acacia wood and the gold and are built together with Jesus Christ in us and us in Him and in His Father together! THIS is the house of God! Then it was that the scripture from Ephesians chapter II was revealed to me as never before:

"20. being built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being the chief corner stone; 21. in whom each several building, fitly framed together, groweth into a holy temple in the Lord; 22. in whom ye also are builded together for a habitation of God in the Spirit."

At this point the Holy Spirit Who had brought me into the courts and tabernacles of the Most High, the Lord of hosts, now began to work mightily within me and brought me into a massively expansive and awesome tabernacle and this time I would have to say the most sacred Temple of all comprising literally millions of the regenerated saints of God taken from the blood of many many nations, languages, races and ages past, present and future and it is impossible to describe but they were all glorified. I was part also of this vast Habitat of the Lord of hosts which seemed like a huge sphere or ball, the believers being the outer walls of this ball and there being a HUGE ball in the middle: that being Christ. He was our Center and we were all looking towards Him in utter adoration and praise!!! Needless to say the tears just flowed profusely at this point and I was caught up into an ecstasy. From this Ball or Center flowed out like a huge river (that nevertheless could still not be seen but only experienced) this golden glory and unsearchable riches of His Life and Nature and Person and work and silver and gold and purple and scarlet and blue and--- well I think you get it. As we received this river with literally millions to infinitude of His unsearchable riches - it flowed out and through (to one another even!) all of us like this huge and awesome slow moving Ocean which we then returned to this Wonderful Christ, Who is the Center and Circumference of all things! How? We returned it to Him by praise and the more we praised the more this Ocean flowed back to us and we soaked up more and more of the elements of these riches again and again and again! Oh the billows of peace and joy. At this point a most awesome experience was mine. I literally felt that these saints were ALREADY ONE!!!!!!! RIGHT NOW!!!!!!! Even though they were glorified as I saw them I literally felt a great oneness with all the believers in heaven AND on earth!!!!!! It was this golden glory that made us one and it is already a fact, brother! And you can bank on it! The revelation I received but not totally at that time of course was that all that I had seen there is already true in Christ and if we were to more diligently seek after the Lord to draw near to Him close to Him and eventually ascertain and live within a our already possessed

oneness with Him then we could surely have a foretaste of these powers of the world to come even in this present evil age! Now ..... does that sound too good to be true? Well, praise the LORD that is part of the good news of Jesus Christ: that the kingdom of God is already within us even right now!!! Hallelujah!! Make it known to every tribe, nation kindred and tongue!!

There's still more! After sitting under the teaching of Witness Lee, who's undoubtedly received more revelation of these things than I have, I saw by God's grace that that great temple which (or whom!) I had seen was actually the same that the apostle John had seen at the isle of Patmos! I had seen the New Jerusalem. This explains the slow moving River in a circumference around all the saints of all places and times, Jews and Gentiles. Witness Lee has one book with literally 19 chapters on the New Jerusalem which is NOT a material place but is US!!! It is US!!!! It is actually a she!!! And she is a real person OUT OF THE SIDE OF THE LAMB OF CALVARY!! She will be His perfect mate!! Hallelujah! More on the New Jerusalem later.

Whew!!!

.....

You would think all of that is enough, right? After four hours I was finally able to get up out of my chair. I stumbled like one drunk with new wine across the room and collapsed into an big easy chair. There the Lord's power was even more marked upon me. I was literally pinned to that chair as if clamped down by 2" thick steal and could hardly even move! I did not know that I could be drawn even closer to the Lord than I had already been but it seemed now that there was no end to how close you can get to Him. However!!!! There are conditions! And there is a price to pay. I was brought nearer and nearer to the One Who sits upon the throne Who is the mysterious Center, Who dwells in immortality and light into which no man can ever enter or ever will. BUT, there is, I learned that day, a closeness to God to which I still have not yet attained. I was brought so near to Him Who is the Reality of all things that I began to tremble ... then I began to shake, then I perceived that there was still a sort of veil betwixt myself and THAT glory!! Alas! I was not allowed to enter. I could not, but I perceived what was within that veil: FIRE!!!! The kind of fire that the natural, sinful and fleshly man could not live in ..... Or even touch lest you die!!! May I get there someday! St. John of the Cross called it the dark night of the soul which proceeds final union with God. But of course that is beyond the scope of this book.

Perhaps what this book deals with is not a greater revelation than the things I have just shared with you but it is more important. The goal or end toward which we all must press is relevant as a motivation towards the goal but it is not very relevant, practically speaking without the means to get there. The revelation of the keys is a revelation of the means to the end and without means the real end is not really in sight.

## Chapter 8 A Hopeless Search? No! Living Stones Built Together!

You can imagine the inward longings within me as I traveled on through my pilgrimage having seen and heard the things that had come to me concerning God's Habitat and eternal dwelling place. It was tough to say the least. Now could I actually find a group of Christians that had the reality of being built together as God's tabernacle and so actually were in the experience of the benefits of the same? Well .... The vision was too strong to put down and give up on. It was during this same time frame that I found Charles G. Finney's "Revival Lectures" at the Bible College Library and was almost taken to the floor by the power of God as I stood there in the aisles of that library. This almost happened to me again in the same library when I found the book "Spiritual Torrents" by Jeanne Guyon.

I actually preached a few sermons on revival during this time as I was beginning to feel spiritually burdened for those around me and wanted to see them know the Lord better. This I believe was the leading of the Spirit of God not only to benefit other lives but to reveal to me what the end result would be of pouring new wine into old wineskins. Well...I SAW the results right in front of my own eyes. This was done at the Foursquare church I was attending during that time (Valley Trinity Foursquare in Reseda, CA). During one meeting in particular there was quite an outpouring of the Spirit of God and many were weeping at the altar in repentance and a fresh desire towards the Lord. However the revival would not last long because the pastor kept going back to his old ways (THAT'S what I thought it was, anyway, but actually it went much deeper than that.) However, somehow I knew deep within that even if there had been a revival that would have lasted there were many other impediments in that particular denomination's way of doing things that would null and void the things I had seen in the revelation of the Tabernacle. I did not "get it" very quickly, however. It took some time and some rough "getting along with" the pastor of the church at that time. I did clearly see that even if God's people were revived even that would not last due to the fact of the pastor bringing the people back to their old ways. Now maybe a revival could last longer in some other church (a little longer maybe) but to have people built together and praising together could not POSSIBLY be accomplished when one man is up in front talking all the time and the rest sitting there. According to the vision I had seen there was a flow of life proceeding from member to member and the warmth of the golden glory of the river of God's Spirit and Life that can NOT take place in a Protestant setting (even no matter how Pentecostal it is). How can that which flows from the Head through every member of the Body become a living reality without "the function in the measure of each one part !!???" There is no way! There are many joints of supply and there are many "parts" mentioned in the Body of Christ. But with pew warmers who don't speak and don't function as Paul said we all can in I Cor. 12-14, then how can what comes from the Head through joints of supply get form the joints to other joints if parts don't pass along what is flowing? What



we are dealing with in reality is just a corpse.

Do not even dream that this writer could EVER agree with your present day kind of so-called "church service" no matter WHAT your way of meeting is like. EVEN if you try top-gun change and get rid of your Protestant or Catholic rituals, then I STILL say: BEGINNINGS ARE EVERYTHING! What I am talking about is something organic. Or rather Someone! The Head, Christ and the Body which Paul calls Christ also if you'll read I Cor. 12, equals "the one new man": a living Organism with the life and nature of God Himself!! And THAT is no joke. Oooops! Sorry, I meant she is no joke. And the Lord Christ is ESPECIALLY more serious about her than anyone else ever could be. He is insanely in love with her! Good night, man! He is blinded to everything else but her! Consider the awful cross: THAT is insane! Except in the context of romance, that is. Will you for one sane moment of your life consider the awful ugliness of the cross?!! THAT, beloved one, is the only word that properly fits Calvary's cross: UGLY! It was downright ugly and to go to that would be an insane act of madness unless the greatest love affair WAAAAY beyond our imagination was at stake. It was for her He went! It was for her He died. BUT how is she going to be actually produced? If you want a certain crop you have to plant the right seed in the ground to bring it up and you then (even though all the properties of a certain life form are IN that seed) you have to take care of it properly, fertilize it properly and water it properly IN the right soil or environment. If you want the right fruit you have to have the right seed but without the right beginnings: **QUIT!!!** Just quit!!!! STOP! You're on the wrong path!!! Ask for the old paths as seen in the book of Acts and first in the very life of the Lord Jesus!! This means starting all over again, not trying to put different bricks on the same old property. How could someone who's seen what I have seen be a friend to today's Christianity? I am against it! 99% at least of today's kinds of meetings miss the mark of the Body of Christ to make His actual Body a reality in the world today. No wonder we are so spiritually shallow!! No wonder the poor world is so lost! How can we get along without the normal flowing of life? No wonder most of the world doesn't want what we got. We don't even want it, if we are honest with ourselves. It's boring! It's NOT what they had in the first century, that's for sure. THEY turned the world upside down! But WE are turning the world off!!!!!! Do you read me: THIS is our #1 problem and also God's #1 problem: SUNDAY MORNING CHURCH SERVICES ARE BOOOORRRRINNNNGGGG!!!! GET IT????? BORING! WAKE UP AND SMELL THE COFFEE!!! I'M TALKING ABOUT CHRIST WHO IS THE REAL COFFEE!!!!

And so we lose members and half the people after they get saved lose interest in "church" and quit coming to our boring rituals and WE JUST MUST BE SO DENSE THAT WE ARE SO BLIND AS TO WHY!!! Isn't the reason obvious? Most people don't like "church." And that my friend is the root of ALL of our problems as far as attracting and keeping people. As for me I finally began to see that even if that Foursquare church I was in



did change their ways and got revived it still could not fulfill the vision of the tabernacle type of building I had had. Believers built together as living stones to show forth the excellencies of Christ is just not going to be realized by mere revival. So of course I had to ask myself: IS THERE HOPE?? And excuse my term "mere revival" as I know today's Christians desperately need real revival and this generation hardly knows what that is. But you must understand that revival is NOT God's goal. Not even the salvation of the lost is God's goal but just one more stepping stone on the way to His final eternal purpose. His final goal is that most intoxicatingly, exotically, frighteningly beautiful (yes, my spirit, soul and body did once endure the terrifyingly awesome shock of catching a faint glimpse of her beauty one glorious day and I understood how the apostles could shed their blood.... And how our dear dear Lord could go ..... Oh!! It's so sooooo awful!!), this beautiful young girl of the new creation who is called: New Jerusalem! She is really worth it all! But wait! There's more! So much more! Just wait until He and She finally unite in eternal union!! Has the eye ever seen? Has the ear ever heard? Has it ever entered into the heart of man what is in store ... here I must stop as the Holy Spirit places His finger of hush upon my lips lest I enter upon that which Paul said it was not lawful to be uttered concerning the things that had been revealed to him when he was caught up into paradise and into the third heavens during three days time when he could not tell whether he was still in his body or out of it. (that was during his 3 years in the desert by the way. Would anyone else in this shallow generation like to try it? Or do you consider such things a waste of time you could use in evangelism? What a pitiful shallow age we live in!)

You really DON'T know who you really are, do you? No ..... you really don't. You are part of that beautiful girl Christ died for. How in the world do you think that you are building her when you are daubing with the untempered mortar of the mere dust and sandy elements of the Babylonian traditions?!! Do you really think that our Protestant and Catholic rituals can be clearly seen in the pages of the New Testament? What in this world or any other world do such boring traditions have to do with the organic divine DNA of the building up of this dear Bride of the Lamb of God??? Our present day concepts and sameness of over and over again ritualistic practices when seen in the light of God's goal are utterly ridiculous! YES. And stupid, too!!!! And I think you are finally getting it. There's a 95% chance or better in these 00's 10s or 20s of the 21st century that I am insulting you !!! That's right! I am probably insulting you!!! WAKE UP!!! To you of my generation I say as Jesus said to His generation: full well you make the Word of God of none effect by your traditions or to use Darby's translation as a direct quote:"making void the word of God by your traditional teaching which ye have delivered; and many such like things ye do." What a way to make friends and influence people! To amplify this thought His word spoken to their ways of doing things in the previous verses are: "washings of vessels and cups, and many other such like things ye do. 9 And he said to them, Well do ye set aside the commandment of God, that ye may observe what is delivered by yourselves [to keep]."

Now: did you notice He said "many such like things ye do"? Well if you read that

passage (Mark 7:5-23), the "many such like things" phrase is used more than once. He starts out calling them hypocrites and later on after He left the crowd and went inside the house with His own disciples whom He loved more than His Own life He told them: "Are ye thus also unintelligent?" Another version translates: without understanding. Another one says, "are you also so dull". This is not a compliment to his own disciples even. Nor is it meant to be a compliment, so don't get your feelings hurt and quit reading just because you're not perfect! It's OK! If the shoe fits, you don't have to wear it! Half of this stuff (at least!) is not your fault. Can we help it that we were born twice in an environment that we couldn't help: twisted and literally soaked with the traditions of smelly Babylon? No, it is not your fault. But still I insult you because I choose to follow the faithful lover of us all Who insulted those of His generation. If His heart is the only heart I make at least 1% happy, at least that is better than His continuing disappointment with generation after generation! So don't get bent out of shape, OK?

Now I realize this may not set so well with some of you traditionalists and present day religious Pharisees who like the greetings of men in today's market place and who like to be called the title: "pastor" and so on. Well, if you want to go on being a thumb sucking yo-yo, go right ahead! God can find someone else! He has in every age found those who want to be His lovers and belong exclusively to His Own Self not a denominational name or sect of some kind.

So now you know what I think of most of what I see around me. If we have a great revival: even then if there is not subsequent building up accomplished according to the pattern which can only be revealed on the mount of God then there is still the reality of new wine being poured into a container that cannot contain it. As a result there is not only not much continuity in people's lives but also the eternal purpose is not being fulfilled (or is it somewhere? It's not being fulfilled the way it should). ANOTHER THING: This is just one more reason why revivals are many times followed by reactions -- very negative spiritual manifestations follow too often.

During my Bible College years my search for a people who were the fulfillment of the vision I had seen of the moving tabernacle of God seemed hopeless. However, I kept visiting meeting hall #2 of The church in Los Angeles as they called it. I would visit only once in a while. There was just something about those people. I would like to point out that there was something there that I was totally blinded to until God was pleased to open my eyes. Can I explain this? Yep! Easy! I was not one of them. It is just that simple. Now I know you've heard this before but it is still true whether its been said 5 times or 50,000 times: Just because you are in a garage does not make you a car. And just because you are at McDonald's does not make you a hamburger. And just because you are on a Navy ship visiting does not make you a sailor, etc. So, just because I was at a local

church meeting so many times did NOT make me to be a PARTAKER OF THE REALITY OF THE BODY OF CHRIST!

So now you want the story. OK. After getting married and finding that the power of God flowing through me was not even doing it for me I was brought to Joe Flores house. After many humbling circumstances I finally read a book I have already mentioned in former chapters of this book: "Further Talks on the Church Life" by Watchman Nee. I began to realize that to be built with other believers you must be together in the same place. Through Watchman Nee's book I began to see that Biblical unity is local. That's all there is to it! Believe it or not, this make's a difference in your life BIG TIME!! Actually it DOES make a difference in your life whether you know it or not -- either for good or evil. Due to circumstances that I could not have very well changed due to the Reagan-omics during that time frame, I had to move back with my parents for a small while. I had just been living in San Fernando but now I was living in a suburb of the great city of Los Angeles again.

You see, San Fernando was inside the borders of that great city Los Angeles BUT it was not part of that great city as it was a city in its own right. So as long as I was there the message I had received about one assembly in one city did not apply to me as far as Los Angeles was concerned. However, I did try to search for those who made up "the church in San Fernando" and even though God considers ALL His children in a city to be members of His one ecclesia in a city there were still no Christians standing on that ground.

While I still did live in San Fernando before I moved back to the suburb of LA where my parents lived at that time I decided to do something. I determined to visit every so-called "church" in that locale to see where they stood and to see if I could reason with any of them concerning the things of God. There were 24 "churches" in the small area called San Fernando at that time. (What happened to just one!) I discovered some very interesting facts:

1. A certain denominational pastor belonging to a certain denomination said in so many words that the idea of God's people as one in a city sounded good and to take that name sounded good. But alas! His "church property," which was pretty big for so small a city, was owned by his denomination. Of course, they would not hear of such things such as changing the name to "church in San Fernando" so he could not do it.
2. Another organization I visited were so dark they could not for the life of them understand what I was even talking about and did not want to discuss it further.
3. Another group was just a glorified Bible study and so dead I didn't want to pursue it further! God, have mercy on me.
4. One place I visited said that it would be impossible for them to stand as the church in San Fernando as some of them came from Covington or some from various other suburbs in LA, etc.
5. That very day I went to another place and they said the pastor was from another locality that was a 45-minute drive away! Just HOW far from Biblical standards have we come?????



The thought had never occurred to me that maybe I should move to a city that already had people who believed that they should be one assembly within one locality. My question to anyone who has dared to read this far is: how do you think that stones, bricks or any other kind of components can be used for building without being brought to the same place or lot of ground first so they can be together? That just could not work, could it?

Well, praise the Lord the circumstances that forced me to move back to my parents brought me back to an LA suburb that just happened to be three long blocks away from meeting hall #2, which is where I had visited before. This time, however, I had a revelation of living stones built together and saw things differently and was finally ready to agree with God on an important aspect of truth: that of the unity of God's people for the purpose of building. Also ... I finally agreed with God that what He says about those living in the same city as belonging together in the same assembly was something that I finally agreed to as being Biblical truth. There is no other kind of unity prescribed in the scriptures!

As I was without a car at that time, I made the long walk to the meeting hall one Friday night. However there was something vastly different about my heart before God this particular night as I had made a very hard and solid commitment and had had a change of mind. This time I was actually going there to join this group.

You see, it was hard because I had also been poisoned by some of the false papers, books and articles concerning this group and I disagreed doctrinally with them (or so I thought: it appeared that I merely did not completely understand what it was they actually believed). So I was joining because I had to to obey God and be with those who were the ones standing on the proper unity and as a result my heart and mind were right with God on this matter of obedience. So you see, I was not merely doing this out of my preference but because I was doing what I knew to be right at the time! Of course, just try and tell that to some people and they will think you're crazy and kick you out! Little did I know that because of my decision before the Lord and because my heart was right with Him concerning unity that I would be so blessed. Little did I know that this blessing was to be there no matter what during every subsequent meeting with these saints from then ON !! (Of course there did come a time when I saw there were more other kinds of Christians even more solidly upon this ground who had something even more!) That night happened to be a message meeting night where they listened to a message by Witness Lee, who was not present at the meeting, but nevertheless was seen on a big video screen. The message was one of a series on Christ as the Offerings and the Tabernacle in the book of John. There was so much revelation there that I was amazed! But not until they started praying after the message one after another did I realize that I HAD FOUND WHAT I WAS LOOKING FOR!! The reality of the tabernacle and the revelation I had had was there! Because I was in the oneness I was part of it. Never before had I ever experienced a blessing like that! This was not merely a revelation, THIS was reality! I was home!



Praise the Lord!

That night during the prayers there was that same river I had seen in my revelation of the New Jerusalem in our midst and it was slowly moving through each member to the next member to the next. I mean I could actually feel it going through the spirits of other saints of God as it flowed through ALL of us! It seemed to flow slowly around as a big circle and seemed to be like the gentle deep emotions that a woman has when her man puts his arm around her.

I never would have completely understood this but in Bible School one of our instructors explained something that hardly anyone ever explains. He told us that women are more emotional than men and that to hold hands has more feelings to it for a woman than it does for a man and that it doesn't usually mean as much for a man. He said that sometimes a woman has a wheel turning around inside her when a man puts his arm around her, etc. Well to me this was weird because I'm not a woman and did not understand what he meant very well.

But this feeling within me that gave more and deeper happiness than I had ever dreamed of soooooo deep within me was also like a big giant wheel flowing through the other holy ones of God also. And I realized right then and there that this was the reaction of a female to a male except this was a different DNA, not merely human! This was my first actual experience of the Bride of Christ!! I had found her! Not only that, but for the first time in my Christian life, I was satisfied! This was IT! And I mean IT! I had found saints actually built together.

Good night man! Not even that time of God anointing me with power was I ever satisfied. A year before this time I had begun to preach the streets with more and more anointing. I had been winning more and more to Christ during evangelistic outreach. Healing and miracles had begun to take place at my hands. Even outright visible miracles had been happening. Even my spirit of travailing prayer was imparted to others during a meeting in which people came up front and stood in a long row and I just prayed the same prayer for them all and went down the row quickly laying my hand on each head as I went and shouted "Jesus! Jesus! Jesus! Every one of them went down to floor under the power of God. BUT.... Was I satisfied??? NO!!! A THOUSAND TIMES NO!!!!!!! NEVER COULD THAT SATISFY THE HUMAN SPIRIT WITH ITS DEPTHS HUNGRY FOR THE RICHES OF JESUS CHRIST!!! Never!!!!

I had found home. Believe me, I understand where our home truly is ... And what it is.

Chapter 9 PARKER - How good and pleasant when brothers dwell together in unity!

It was before I joined the "church" in Los Angeles that I signed the dotted line to join the Navy in December of 1982. After raising my right hand and swearing in at the Los Angeles processing facility, I was immediately placed on the "delayed entry program" since they can only take so many at a time into boot camp. I was destined to enter boot camp 8 months later in August of '83. Even though I had sworn in because the Lord directed me due to my unemployment situation, it seems as soon as I had entered into the church life situation in meeting hall 2 there in Panorama City, He turned my joblessness around and blessed me. The door opened for me to get into carpet cleaning work. So I went and bought a car for a measly \$1100! That car took me thousands of miles all over Los Angeles County and beyond in my carpet cleaning adventures during those 8 months (until just the right time 2 weeks and 2 days before I was to enter into boot camp!) and I began to make money hand over foot! It seemed I could feel the blessing of the Lord upon me day after day as He granted me favor with those whom I worked with.

I soon discovered that meeting with "The church in Los Angeles" as it's called was an awesome experience into the nearness of Christ and the Lord gave me health and prospered me even as my soul prospered. Well, between the time of my swearing into the Navy and my joining the local church I moved in with my parents. Even though I started to make enough money to get a place to live, I didn't dare because I knew that in a short time I'd be departing for another life and wind up who knows where? So during this time I did not have much togetherness with my wife and little daughter. As a result we had high hopes for a new life at my new duty station, wherever that would be.

Soon the carpet cleaning business got so good and I was doing so well at it that I began to doubt if it really was the will of God and if He had indeed spoken to me to join the Navy. It seemed to me that if I joined I would not be making as much money as I was then. I soon began to think about if there was a way to back out. The Lord's financial blessing just seemed to increase more and more. But now as I look back all the things I'm writing about concerning the lost keys would never have happened had I not joined the Navy and financial blessing is not necessarily the criteria of whether you are in the Lord's will or not. Some of the persons who have lived who lived right next to the hem of Jesus garments were rich, awesomely rich! And some were super poor!

Another factor that was in my mind was that I was enjoying the meetings at the local church so much and growing there in the Lord in a way that I had never done before. How and why could the Lord be moving me out of such a situation?

And even though His words were true about taking me to another locality to start an ecclesia, there are other factors. Those words did come to me and I can see the reason for it now these many years later. BUT I surely was not ready to raise up genuine church life, but then again who is these days?

I wish I had seen then what I see now, but even the meeting life I was in at that time though it was the most awesome thing I had ever seen and it was probably the most God could do for me at the time to bring me into the light : there was still an element of formalism and ritual still even at the assembly in Los Angeles(though their form was far more living and lively than the rest of today's Christianity). However when the Lord moved me to South Carolina we had nothing but meetings in the homes and were much more informal and without many of the trappings of some of the local church meetings.

It is amazing how this all took place at the same time frame that the old system in the local church meetings was starting to be changed! I look back on it now and am so amazed. And even though I see that brother Gene Edwards is more clear about how to get back to the reality that the first century had by starting from scratch all over again, NOT trying to change something that already exists, I still have to compare these two men. I do not think Gene Edwards could have done the awesome thing Witness Lee did: i. e. to change the system of one man speaking and the rest listening to everyone functioning and speaking in the meetings: ON SUNDAY MORNING OF ALL TIMES!!! Gene would have been wiser had he been at the helm of that movement to abandon the whole thing and start over. But to change the system the way brother Lee did has never been done by any man upon the face of this earth!!! Not even a Watchman Nee could pull that off and believe me, he tried to in the 1940's but he just couldn't do it. However if such a one as Witness Lee had seen as clearly as brother Gene Edwards his success would have been even much more than it was! And what a success it was! As I read some of the messages in the last 2 years that he spoke during those years that Witness moved back to Taiwan to start "The New Way" in 1984 through 1987 and in reading one message in particular, I was so astounded at the greatness and golden godliness of the inwrought humility of Christ in Witness Lee that I cried and cried and cried before the Lord in reading that message. Although literally thousands were being saved and baptized in their bathtubs, 7000 home meetings were taking place, the mutual speaking of every member began to be a reality and even the big meetings in the meeting halls (the church in Taipei had 22 meeting halls at that time and some of them were sky scrapers) began to have more actual functioning of even the little members of Christ's Body, etc. ... Witness knew he had not hit the mark!! He spoke these words: "there is still among us the deadness of Sardis and the Lukewarmness of Laidocaea." And then he admitted humbly that he did not know how to get through! He admitted that he did not see clearly. He admitted that the battle was somewhat too fierce and raging and the necessity of so much prayer warfare proved something was amiss! He admitted that he didn't have all the answers! He admitted that possibly he needed to fire all the elders! But he wasn't clear about it! He admitted that maybe the answer was to close all the meeting halls



and just have home meetings! But he wasn't clear about it! It was obvious to me that he did not see as clearly as he would have liked to have seen as to the divine blueprint for building.

Now: Enter Stage Right : The Sovereign HAND OF GOD !!!! Exactly 2 weeks and 2 days before I was to enter boot camp my old car that had made me so much money hand over foot, my measly \$100 car STOPPED!!! It just stopped dead in the middle of a busy intersection and would not move! As traffic got stopped behind me and I was sitting there in that suddenly dead car, the Sovereign Lord spoke: "I'm giving you two weeks vacation before you go to boot camp!" Well! I guess so! I came to find out that my rear wheel drive was a goner. Some guys helped me pull it over to a gas station as it died right next to a gas station where I could park it. The guys there checked it out and told me next day that the best thing to do was graduate it to a junk yard.

The night it broke down I got a phone call from someone whom I had never met. He was an acquaintance of a sister in Christ whom we had known and had lived somewhat near to my parents for and who had been a good friend of my mom's for many years. Anyway this young brother was also, like me, about to join the Navy and was due to report for boot camp in only 2 days! Little did we know of course that you get set with the group of guys on the very day you enter and form a company on that very day. But how were we to know? Well here we were: two brothers who had never seen one another praying over the phone that we would get a group together to fellowship and pray to help us through the rough times in boot camp. He was to enter in two days. Me? Two weeks and two days. The problem is I forgot his name after that.

After I got through the first day in boot camp I vaguely thought of this brother but immediately dismissed it out of my mind as I realized that not only had I forgotten his name but he was in a company formed 2 weeks before mine. I soon found out that life in boot camp was rough to say the least. It sure helps to have a firm grip on God. I found I needed the comfort of the Holy Spirit quite often. Also the Lord's supernatural healing hand got my twisted pain - wrenched muscles out of trouble miraculously! Of course it was also a big help to have some Christian fellowship during those rare times when we even had a little bit of time to talk with our fellow "ship-mates."

The thing that troubled me the most (I was not the only one who regarded this as the biggest problem) was the fear of having to endure yet even more separation from my wife. You see, my compatriots and I had joined the Navy and were becoming sailors and what do sailors do? Go to sea. And fresh out of boot camp you'll get assigned to a ship 9 out of 10 times. Now most ships go to sea quite a bit and this does not make for family togetherness as much as you'd like. In fact, more than any other service the Navy is a true sacrifice for your country and for our freedom and unfortunately that sacrifice is family time.

The enemy would bring thoughts to my mind of being assigned to a ship that was due to go on West Pak (a six-month cruise across half the earth) as soon as I reported aboard. I prayed that God would send me to shore duty 1st but rarely does that happen. I would actually hear in my head the sounds of the winds howling out at sea during the lonely nights underway. Later in life I could

testify that these groaning, howling and creaking sounds of a ship at night are pretty accurate to what I had imagined or possibly what the devil was conjuring up in my mind.

After about 3 weeks into boot camp about four "set-backs" from another company were sent to join our company due to test failures. I think a couple of these guys were Christians and I started to meet with them in the head (bathroom) after taps (though it was breaking the rules) for prayer and fellowship. One guy I remember in particular: he was a short red-haired guy and I remember meeting with him quite often and our conversations concerning our faith taught me quite an interesting lesson about always trusting in God not in man. Even as God said "don't trust even in a brother" and somewhere else it is written: "there is a Friend who sticketh closer than a brother."

They would let us go to the various chapels on Sunday as certain Chaplains there represented certain faiths. This was one of the rare times we ever got away to do something different and not so structured and controlled. Now as I was wont to play Christian praise songs on the keyboards be it piano or organ, I found an organ at one chapel. So I asked the Chaplain if I could accompany his worship time as I could follow along most songs by ear and knew many by heart, etc. It seemed that an anointing was upon my hands that particular morning and the singing was especially prolonged for more time than was usually spent. The short red-haired brother who I'd recently met and had been fellowshiping with was especially blessed by the Lord during this time and was lifting his hands up in praise and worship sort of basking in the presence of Christ. While praising and thanking the Lord in such a way, he began to thank Him for me and said "Lord, thank you for (my last name)" .... It was then that he said that the Lord reminded him of something and when He reminded him the chills and goose bumps just went up and down his spine. The Lord told Him: "don't you remember who that brother is? That's Kevin (my last name). That's the brother you prayed with 2 nights before you left for boot camp over the phone! I answered your prayer without you even realizing it!!" **Zap!!!!** He was feeling the Lord's presence strongly and really began to praise Him!

After the "service" was over he came up to me and told me of course and as he did: Zap!!! The goose pimples were all over me too! You see we had both forgotten each other's names. (Oh, his name? Parker was his last name. I do not at this time remember his first name anymore) And both of us had figured we'd never meet anyway because of the way people get set in companies and you hardly ever get to talk with anyone in another company. But when he failed that reading class it was the sovereignty of God that he would be set back exactly 2 weeks to our company and guess who was in the company that arrived in San Diego exactly 2 weeks after he did? Me, of course! So God had answered our prayer and we had been fellowshiping in the head after hours in answer to prayer with out our even knowing it!

Of course one of the things I fellowshiped with him about was this desire I had to be with my wife and to spend a year with her as the scripture says in the book of Numbers. It says that when a man takes a new wife he is not to go to the fields or go out to war right away etc. But he is to spend that first year of

marriage at home to "cheer the wife which he has taken." Now I was telling Parker that I had claimed this as a promise in my prayer before the Lord and he told me that I had better be prepared to accept the will of the Lord no matter what it might be as sometimes it is not always what we would have chosen or what we would like and that God might be sending me to a ship. "You don't know" he said. "that might be the will of the Lord."

Well, of course this "fellowship" did not help my faith any (actually it did in the long run in a negative sort of way when you think of how it weaned me off of man to God). Nor did it help assuage my fears or keep me from imagining the howling winds in the dark of night during those rough days. But I have learned since then that when something is in scripture such as that word concerning the first year of marriage, that that written word is a direct declaration of the will of God and you can bank on it and as shaky as I felt inside and as real as my fears seemed to be... still, I had put my faith up to Him based on His word and took it as a promise and I did believe though my faith was somewhat shaky. The lesson learned is that even a brother whom God has brought your way has to have his words tested by the Word of God and as brother can be wrong! So was he wrong? Yes, he was wrong for the most part. I WAS sent to a ship. But this particular ship hardly ever went out to sea!

Before this conversation with Parker my wife had sent me a card in the mail which quoted the verse: "Behold. How good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell in unity" and thank the Lord this was a remembrance for me during the conversation with Parker and helped my faith enough to even disagree with the brother. OK I know I'm not one to hardly agree with brothers on anything and this hardly seems right when I just quoted a verse about dwelling with them in unity but that unity had better be UNITY WITH GOD AND HIS PURPOSE not something else! And if unity with my brother (s) is out of sync with God then it is Disunity with God and that is always serious.

In the next chapter the miracle of clear light and direction goes on about how my existing faith was solidified and how the flowing of the building up in the Body played the biggest part into building my faith!



## Chapter 10 How Good and How Pleasant: Psalms 133 on the blessing of LIFE

I think my conversation with Parker concerning our impending orders occurred about the 7th week of boot camp. There was still a battle going on until after boot camp was over. But something had happened in about the 3rd or 4th week to assist my faith and little did I know strengthen it for even further trials during the actual revelation of the lost keys in South Carolina. What was it? I got a post card. My wife sent me a post card and it said on the front cover: "How good and how pleasant it is when brethren dwell together in unity." This was a direct quote of Psalms 133:1 which was already by that time becoming one of the most important passages of scripture to my heart during those times than anything ever written.

I had recently done a study concerning this scripture and was especially impressed with verse 3 where it says. "There the Lord commanded the blessing, even life forever more." Where is there? There is where brothers dwell together in unity. And it has to be scriptural unity not just some Joe Blow's opinion of what he thinks unity is. It has to be what God thinks it is. And what does God think? That's simple! God thinks unity is one assembly per one city! Period! To that there are no ands, ifs or buts. That is Biblical unity whether you like it or don't like it and like it or not you belong together with the exact believers who live in your locality. .... Do you even know them?!!! I'll admit I'm in a situation where I don't.

But to get back, by experience this scripture had already become precious to me because I had tasted the "blessing of life" at the "church in Los Angeles" and as much as I had experienced as a Christian already of the powers of the world to come and the grace of God, etc. .... Well, the blessing of life was just the greatest blessing of all and it is not just individual Christian life it is the life of God more abundantly as it flows through the members of Christ's Body. It is Body life. So you see this scripture was already quite precious in its meaning to me for there I had found fullness of joy, there I had found unsearchable riches of Christ and there I had found the reality of which my revelation of the tabernacle was only a vision and had not yet been a reality. But that post card in boot camp had an added meaning to me when it was sent. To me it seemed I was being given hope that it applied to my wife and I that we would dwell together in unity at our new home no matter where that should be. I could not have gotten anything that said it better or a better choice of words. I do not believe it was an accident that she happened to pick out that particular card at that particular time. Since this was one of the three passages in the Word that was being rehearsed again and again by the Holy Spirit in my mind through not only this experience but that which was to come it was

also another sign post along the way. It was another indication of the finger of God writing upon the wall. I will write concerning the meaning of these three passages in the next three chapters. As you read on you will see there were too too many signposts along the way to be ignored. This chain of events was no accident!

After boot camp graduation there was a marvelous re-union with my wife during the following weekend. After this I was to begin 4 weeks of Fireman apprenticeship training. The difference between this training and boot camp was that we had (aside from duty sections and watches) after our school times and on the weekends a thing called liberty. Liberty meant you could get into civilian clothes and go off base for awhile. Hmmmm.... Now what would I do with that (besides the weekend when I went to visit my wife)? Well, I called the same kind of Christians on the phone of which I had been meeting with in LA. I found out that one of the brothers who went to "The church in San Diego" was in the Navy and had access to the base. So he picked me up for a meeting. So I experienced my first meetings with the church in San Diego during that time.

One of the meetings in particular I will never forget. There was so much light such as I had not been exposed to in a long time due to the actual Body relationship of many members of Christ being together. Since many members were actually functioning in praises one brother after another and the amens following, the intensified light of Christ was shining brightly! It was so wonderful that it was like coming out of a long dark tunnel I had been in during boot camp. It is impossible to describe to you what it was like unless you have ever tasted genuine "church-life" as they call it. I would call it the reality of the Body of Christ. There was so much light there that in the first 3 minutes of that meeting I was so enlightened that the resident underlying faith within me that had been lying there buried with the fears, worries, cares and other choking elements to be found at boot camp life were instantly blown away! I stood there basking in the presence of God and faith came alive! Why! Because in the real Body relationship when found on this earth in reality brings with it the light of Christ! Along with that there is the speaking of God. I do not mean an audible voice or words (I would be careful of that if I were you) in my brain but rather as it should be: enlightenment upon the Word and promises of God that causes faith to spring into action and come alive!

So of course you will ask what it was that came alive to me that day specifically? Now note this: that all of this came to light during the first 3 minutes of that meeting as it were all at once! It was amazing! First I was enlightened by the fact that the declaration concerning a man not going to war but remaining at home with his wife to cheer the wife he has taken for that first year was a declaration of the will of God. This could be claimed by faith as a promise of God for every newly married young couple. I had been standing upon this passage in Numbers by faith but it was my mind that had been assailed by the enemy.

Secondly, there was a revelation that the doubts, fears spooky thoughts about the imaginary gusts of the whispering spirits resembling the night gales and

winds of the sea, etc. were a ploy of Satan to rob me of what was mine. The words of John 10:10 were made alive to me in an instant: "The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly." (KJV) Thirdly, with these words the light from the Lord came: how can Satan steal something that does not already belong to you? And if it already belongs to you it is something you already possess because you have it either in the now or by faith!! Hallelujah! At this point even though I had not yet received my orders I knew that I would be sent to a command where I would spend at least a year at home with my wife. (I was actually given about 4 1/2 years the majority of which were spent in port!) There was not even the shadow of a doubt in my mind! All the cobwebs had been blown away! Far away! All the little spiders were running in different directions for cover and my mind was instantly delivered from every fear and doubt and all this TOOK PLACE IN JUST 3 MINUTES !!!!!!! Praise the Lord! Even though all that took place in 3 minutes, there was not an opportunity to share this with the brothers and sisters until after about 15 or 20 minutes into the meeting. This was due to so many standing up one by one (or saying things, praying things from a sitting position etc.) wanting to share something or break forth in praise or call out a hymn. When I did stand up, I did not go into my personal situation but rather just shared from John 10:10 how the enemy does not come EXCEPT to steal!! And he cannot steal what is not already yours!!! Then I said I thank God that I have such and such and after my testimony it seemed the whole room was set aflame with the glory of God as brother after brother stood up declaring what we have in Christ! "Thank the Lord that we have unsearchable riches in Christ!" and the whole room thundered in unison: AMEN! Suddenly he sat down and another brother stood up and on it went for a couple of minutes! Then another: "We have the promises of God, yea and amen in Jesus Christ!" AMEN! Then another: "We have like precious faith" AMEN! Then another: "We HAVE the Triune GOD !!!!!!!!!!" AMEN! And on and on! It seemed the whole meeting was set aflame with the glory of God! Now was this a confirmation that the Lord had answered my prayer or what? Hallelujah! Amen!

Now I do not quite remember whether it was this meeting or another meeting before this one or after this when another very special event to my mind was made manifest, but a song was emphasized in that meeting in a very special way. They sang a very special rendition of Psalm 133: all three verses. They sang the words over and over in that meeting and then spoke them in prayer, praise and pray reading to the Lord and surely I was quite impressed as to the importance of this truth before the Lord. There was no getting away from it. All this of course was during a four week period in San Diego during my Fireman Apprenticeship training after boot camp. In the fourth week we got our original orders assigned to us for our first permanent duty station in the Navy. This event took place after those that I have mentioned above. My orders were to the USS Holland AS-32, which was homeported at Charleston, South Carolina! At first I was under the impression that this was not so good as this was a ship and ships get underway and go to sea but then someone told me that the Holland is a tender, spending most of its time import taking care of submarines and that those submarines are far more important than us going to sea. Praise the Lord!



When I left San Diego to be with my wife at my mother in law's house for a couple weeks leave before reporting to my first ship. I met another young sailor on that flight with his seabag right next to him. He was wearing his blues for the flight. When I told him I was destined to report to the USS Holland he said "how boring!! You'll never see anything but the boring Charleston pier! That ship hardly goes anywhere or sees anything but home!" To him it was boring, but to me it was God's answer! How I rejoiced with pure joy! Praise the Lord's name forever!!!

### Psalm 133

A Song of Ascents. Of David.

1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is  
For brethren to dwell together in unity!

2 It is like the precious oil upon the head,  
Running down on the beard,  
The beard of Aaron,  
Running down on the edge of his garments.

3 It is like the dew of Hermon,  
Descending upon the mountains of Zion;  
For there the Lord commanded the blessing—  
Life forevermore.

## Chapter 11 Three Biblical Passages: The Building, the Body and the Bride; 1st: Matthew 16:13-26

During those days before and after boot camp and also before and after my transfer to the East Coast there were 3 passages that kept coming back to me over and over. It is interesting that these 3 passages had everything in the world not only to do with that 5-day trek which is the center and purpose of this book, but also the very eternal purpose of God. If God had not desired the above three mentioned realities as presented in the title of this chapter I do not believe He would even started to create. The three passages concern three of the aspects of God's eternal purpose that concern His extension and very much to do with the ecclesia, assembly or what some people call the "church." Anyhow these are the three aspects of the assembly, habitat or building of God that were being revealed to me at that time. The first passage (Matt. 16:13-26) concerned the Christ of God as the foundation for His people to be built up as the building of God. In other words, God's building. The 2nd (Psalm 133:1-3) concerns Christ as the Head and His people as the Body under the anointing. In other words, THE ONE NEW MAN made up of Christ as the Head and Him and us as Christ's Body. The third passage consists of the 1st two chapters of the Bible and the last two chapters of the Bible with special emphasis upon the married couple in both passages. There is a book I picked up for the first time during that 5-day stretch which I'll come to later as a very big part of this story. It is interesting that brother Witness Lee, who wrote that book takes these 3 items in the same order as they were brought to me during this revelation: the #1. Building, #2. The Body, and #3. The Bride. What really amazed me upon review of these things was that Paul's letter entitled to the Ephesians contains a revelation of these things in the exact same order! In chapter 2 Paul speaks of us being the building as a holy temple, a habitat or house for God by His Spirit. He speaks of the Body in chapter one yes, but his major revelation of the Body is in chapters 3 & especially 4. Then he writes probably the greatest revelation of the Bride of Christ to that date in chapter 5.

It is interesting if you study these writings you will find that the revelation of the Body of Christ saturates every other revelation of the ecclesia in this letter. For example in chapter 5 Paul states that a husband should love His wife even as his own body as the Lord loves the ecclesia and cherishes her. Paul does there refer to Adam as having part of his body removed from him and then that counterpart being removed and being loved as his own body because she was his own body and the two became one again. But in all that it is quite evident there

is more revelation of the Body. Then it says He is the Savior of the Body, speaking of the same ecclesia as he was when speaking of the bride. This is why you can see quite a strong revelation of the Body in the first chapter of the letter.

Who is the Son of Man?

Matt 16:13 contains the question: "he asked his disciples, saying, Who do men say that the Son of man is?" This question in itself is a very interesting method used by the King of all teachers and revelators Himself. Jesus knew how to ask the right question at the right time in order to cause His listeners to consider things and get into a thought pattern in such a way that the Holy Spirit could then reveal something of the Lord to them. And not only would they get a revelation but in considering and giving an answer they would get even more revelation! What a Master Teacher He was!

Since they already knew the opinions of that day the first question was easy to answer: "14. And they said, Some say John the Baptist; some, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets." Then He tossed a hard one trying to get someone into an angle of divine shining light: "But who say ye that I am?"

The Anointed (Application!) and Offspring (Life-giving DNA!) of God

It was only Peter who got into the ray of revelation at that time. I believe it was because He had not too long before this been the only one who had actually stepped out on faith and walked on water. He got a glimpse like none of the others at that time just who Jesus was. Sure he fell but that's because he walked! Nobody else stepped out! Sure he put his foot in his mouth but he's also the only one who spoke the words on Pentecost by which 3000 were brought into the habitat and family of God. At this juncture: "Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father who is in heaven.

18. And I also say unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. 19. I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 20. Then charged he the disciples that they should tell no man that he was the Christ."

"You are the Christ" or the Messiah. Both these words mean "Anointed One." This was one of the biggest hopes of that day and age, mostly for political reasons. Many hoped for the Messiah but few understood what "Messiah" really meant and when the Reality hit home on planet earth, of course some rebelled against it as



it obviously implied deep demands upon the human heart and life. The anointing is the ointment of the Holy Spirit blessing, invading, shining and even intertwining with human life. Of course Jesus Christ is the Mediator or go between of the divine life meeting the human life.

"The Son of the living God!!!!!!!" Hallelujah! If you put the Christ together with the Son or the very Offspring of God you have here the very DNA of the divine life being applied to us by the ointment of the Holy Spirit! Christ is both! Hallelujah! The true purpose of the anointing of the Anointed One was to cause US to become the very DNA of the living God! Hallelujah! This is not just the application of Himself to our being to comfort supply and strengthen, etc. but it is the very mingling of His divinity with our new humanity! Of course this was impossible before His death and resurrection by which He cleansed us through death and caused us to be regenerated by His resurrection even as Peter tells us in I Peter 1:3: "we have been regenerated through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead."

The Father Reveals the Son The Son Reveals the Ecclesia

Peter received a revelation of Christ directly from the Father of Who this Jesus was and spoke it out as a communication not only back to the Lord but also to his brethren. Then the Lord spoke the following: "Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona, for flesh and blood has not revealed [it] to thee, but my Father who is in the heavens. 18 And \*I\* also, I say unto thee that \*thou\* art Peter, and on this rock I will build my assembly, and Hades' gates shall not prevail against it." Upon this rock was not just Himself. There is a false doctrine in existence saying that Peter was this rock and that this was his inauguration as the first pope. Although Jesus used the word "Peter" and changed his name from Simon to this it is a slightly different word in the Greek. But to say that Christ is this rock is not totally accurate either. Christ is everything! Of course He is the Rock, He's the stone the builders rejected and became the Head of the corner. In other places in scripture He is called the cornerstone. It was Paul who clarified this in Ephesians 2:19 & 20 where he says the apostles and prophets are the foundation with Christ as the chief cornerstone. And you thought only Christ was the cornerstone or the foundation! Whoops! Wait a minute, does not Paul say elsewhere in I Cor. 3:11 that "other foundation no man can lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ." OK Paul, which is it?!? Is it Christ or it Christ + these helpers and servants of his?

IF THIS WERE NOT SUPER SUPER IMPORTANT, WHY WOULD I WASTE MY TIME TO WRITE ABOUT IT? Without the words of the Lord Jesus and the events recorded in Matt 16 we could not get clear on this. He said "Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona" and if the Lord had not come to us from above how could we be blessed? It was because Peter had seen and heard Jesus that he could get a revelation of Him! There's a song: "without Him, how lost I would be." Thank God the Lord Jesus was willing



## The Gates of Hades and the Keys of the Kingdom

There have been many teachers of the Bible who have said that there were 2 keys of the Kingdom and Peter had and used them both. He opened the door of the Kingdom to the Jews on the day of Pentecost and he then again 10 years later opened the door of faith to the Gentiles at the house of Cornelius. They say this because the Holy Spirit fell in both instances and the gift of tongues resulted from an outpouring of the Holy Spirit. Sure, OK, but there are more keys to this kingdom and they are given to not only Peter but to all who are the real bearers of the revelation of Christ and who are faithful not only to the Lord but to His purpose which is the building up of His Body. These keys open many things. They open the Spirit as the holy of holies to man. They open the Tabernacle that men could enter into God Himself and have fellowship with Him. But actually the opening of the Kingdom is not mentioned as much as something else in this passage. It is another kind of door the Lord refers to. The keys do not merely open. They lock! It is a very important fact to mention here that the gates of Hades cannot prevail when there is the building up of the Divine life and nature as the one new man, Christ. But there is another factor concerning those gates also! They can even be locked up concerning this built up ecclesia! And what needs to be locked up? The gates of Hades! Here we see the Lord continue and we see what happened: "I say unto thee that \*thou\* art Peter, and on this rock I will build my assembly, and Hades' gates shall not prevail against it. 19 And I will give to thee the keys of the kingdom of the heavens; and whatsoever thou mayest bind upon the earth shall be bound in the heavens; and whatsoever thou mayest loose on the earth shall be loosed in the heavens. 20 Then he enjoined on his disciples that they should say to no man that he was the Christ. 21 From that time Jesus began to shew to his disciples that he must go away to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised. 22 And Peter taking him to [him] began to rebuke him, saying, [God] be favorable to thee, Lord; this shall in no wise be unto thee. 23 But turning round, he said to Peter, Get away behind me, Satan; thou art an offense to me, for thy mind is not on the things that are of God, but on the things that are of men. " This rock denoting all that had taken place with the blessed revelation and Peter's resulting confession of the Christ before God and men as a preview of what the assembly life was really like as Paul reveals to us in I Cor. 14. But, of course, there was no way Peter or any of the rest of us could have received this Jesus and His oil of anointing and the application of His Sonship to remake us into the Ecclesia without the cross! So the Lord Jesus had to complete the revelation of that building, the assembly and Ecclesia by a revelation of his crucifixion and resurrection. You see! It's not so easy to get a revelation of the Ecclesia, which is His Body. It's easier to get a revelation of Christ.

Peter is big time proof of this. It was not long after his great confession of the Lord Jesus occurred that he turned around and became Satan. After all, man,



give him a break. Aren't you the same way? We got a nature from both our first birth and our second birth. And its so easy to trip from one into the other its ridiculous. You'd think Peter would have learned it by the very events that caused him to get a revelation of who Christ was in the first place: his walking on the water. All it took was for Peter to take his eyes off his glorious Lord for one second and he got scared, lost faith and began to sink! Hey don't blame him! YOU didn't walk on water! (Probably) And the other 11 surely didn't. It is a hard thing in these present so called "last days" of this age where the so-called latter day rain is happening to see any real building up of the organism of the corporate Body of Christ happen simply because there is so little revelation of it these days. These days are actually VERY DARK. Christians today think they are enlightened but in all actuality they are very much in the dark. They think they have touched some depths but are mostly very shallow. The unfathomless depths of the riches and mysteries of Christ have hardly been touched upon. Where are the keys? How do you use them? Where did they go? Are you concerned about this? Are you concerned about HIS KINGDOM? Or are you just concerned about your little kingdom? And pray tell: what is that? Well now, even the closest disciples who walked and talked with our Lord Jesus Christ missed it so how do we think we are the greatest Christians who ever lived. We're no doubt totally missing it. Here our Lord commends Peter and calls him "Blessed" as he did not receive what he received from flesh and blood but from the Father in heaven. Then He turns around possibly ten minutes later and calls the same man Satan! Is the Lord fickle here? I think not! I think it is Simon. The name Simon means a reed. A reed is the opposite of a stone. A reed is easily blown by the wind. In this case the wind is that which Paul spoke of in Ephesians 4:14: "in order that we may be no longer babes, tossed and carried about by every wind of \*that\* teaching [which is] in the sleight of men, in unprincipled cunning with a view to systematized error;" We have to realize (and sometimes it is only by denying the Lord 3 times) that we are both Simon and Peter. Peter realized it even years and years later when he wrote his second epistle as from "Simon Peter." "Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, To those who through the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ have received a faith as precious as ours: " He knew by rough experience just who he was.

THIS is the biggest reason why we need the keys! Because we are too many times like a reed shaken by the wind and even (what do I mean even! It should be EASILY) used by the wind. How can this be stopped? #1. By the Lord building His Ecclesia! And the building comes by the confession of the revelation. How we need this. But we also need something else. We need to use the three keys of the cross. Three keys of the cross? That's right without the Christ, the Anointed One by his ointment applied by the cross to our flesh self and soul life, there can be no locking up of the gates of Hades!!! Self is the avenue by which Satan operates and comes forth whether it is a good self or a bad self!!! Again it must be reiterated again and again that you cannot fight this battle on your own without grace and without not only the grace by relation with the Lord but with

the fellow stones built together. Again I say **THE KEYS WORK IN THE BUILDING!** **THE KEYS WORK ONLY IN THE BUILDING!** There **MUST** be some kind of relationship with the Lord's Tabernacle here. The Christian life is just too hard outside of the context and reality of the Father's house. It is like trying to survive as a fish out of water. If we are not in relationship with other believers passing back and forth a revelation, a confession and even the very anointing feeding essence of our Lord Jesus himself by his Spirit it is almost impossible to survive. Unless you have already grown to the extent that a Paul isolated in prison or a John exiled to an Island Patmos then you need the proper habitat for the growth of the divine life to flourish. Those men had unsearchable riches of many members of the Body in their one person. If you can contain that kind of wealth in your one vessel and by prayer or writing letters as these men were doing or receiving revelation, etc. you can retain some kind of relationship to the Body then maybe you'll be OK but who in this day and age fits into **THAT** category of Christian?!?! There are few of us alive today who could ever make such a claim. But **THAT** is part of what qualifies a man for being an apostle or a sent one. And I'll probably use the term "sent one" rather than apostle as apostle is just a transliteration.

### The Three Keys to Lock Up Hell!

So what are these three keys? After the Lord rebuked Peter He plainly told his disciples and all of us through these written scriptures just what these three keys are! Praise You Lord forever for your faithfulness! Probably, if I had been the Lord and Peter had expressed his concern out of the love and kindness of his heart: "God be favorable unto thee..... etc." I probably would have just been nice and appreciated his concern. I mean after all Peter wanted Christ to stay with himself and his companions. But possibly Jesus is one of the few persons Who has ever lived Who told the truth!

There are many today who would reject His words as being truth. After all He called the man Satan. Was he really or was he just under Satan's influence? Come on now! Peter was motivated by his love for the Lord! He was speaking out of the goodness tenderness and compassion of his heart! And the faithful dear Lord called him Satan?!?!? Well, then, he must have **BEEN** Satan. But now we must ask why? It was because when we stay in self instead of in the Spirit we become a channel and the very gates of Hades or hell! Ouch! OK so now you know what the gates of Hades is! OK, so you should probably sit down and breath deep till you recover from the shock of what I really just wrote if indeed you did really get it! What! Have you not read Matthew 16 before? Were your eyes closed? Jesus told him: "Get away behind me, Satan; thou art an offense to me, for thy mind is not on the things that are of God, but on the things that are of men." He is referring to Peter's thought pattern, his opinions, his outlook, and opinion

etc. etc. etc.!!!!!!! To have a mind set on the things of man is the same as the mind set upon the flesh being death. He actually became one with Satan at that point so the Lord was actually rebuking the both of them! WE are the gates of Hades! Hey man! Where are those keys? How do they work? It is fallen man that is the passageway for Satan to flow through and it has happened through ALL of us poor human beings. This is why we often wind up hurting the very ones we love! But what about when we are being the opposite? Nice, like Peter? Maybe we are being nice, yes, but at the same time we are leading others and ourselves away from the truth and away from God! Why? We are fallen and almost our whole being is fallen. What does fallen mean? Away from God! ..." for thy mind is not on the things that are of God, but on the things that are of men." Can this really be a passage of Satan? Sure! Do you see the difference between Peter's concept of saving oneself and Jesus concept as put forth in the words following this? **THIS IS WHAT WE DO NOT WANT TO HEAR!** It goes against the grain of the very fiber of our being. But I will tell you this from my limited experience: turning from the land of self to the land of the unsearchable Christ has its rewards. To step out and walk on this water and keep on keeping on keeping our eyes on Jesus. Now that's the key. Oh by the way, if you are getting dizzy from hearing all this, don't worry or be anxious! **THIS COULD NEVER WORK FOR YOU!** Or if it did it would be like a car running with hardly any oil. You are probably not in ecclesia life in a real situation where you are built with other living stones so you are like a fish out of water and 9 times out of 10 it **WON'T WORK!** Hey! It wasn't designed to work without the Body of Christ. Christ lives a Body life just like you do. His life is in His Body and that's where it is and if you are not built up with others upon the foundation of the confession based upon the revelation of the Person, you are a fish out of water and the keys won't work. After all, the door to the building is ON the building. You are most likely out of your natural habitat as a son of God and that is why you don't see much spiritual growth these days.

But the keys are still there for you hit and miss and they always benefit the Lord, you AND others for something eternal. If nothing else, you may bind Satan and loose God to work at least in your own life. There are many wonderful keys for loosing the life of God from out of His building, which is us. There is so much talk these days concerning these things that it is not my place to add much to it here. However we also are the Gates, practically speaking for the enemy to come forth. Not much has been said on these things and the Lord knew it would be so. Due to the grave importance of this truth He emphasized it. Without the operation of the cross there can be no building up. This is why we have seen very little building up of His body through the centuries. It is because for the most part Matthew 16 has been veiled for centuries and we have been in darkness concerning its meaning.

The three keys are:



Deny yourself.  
Take up the cross.  
Lose your soul-life.

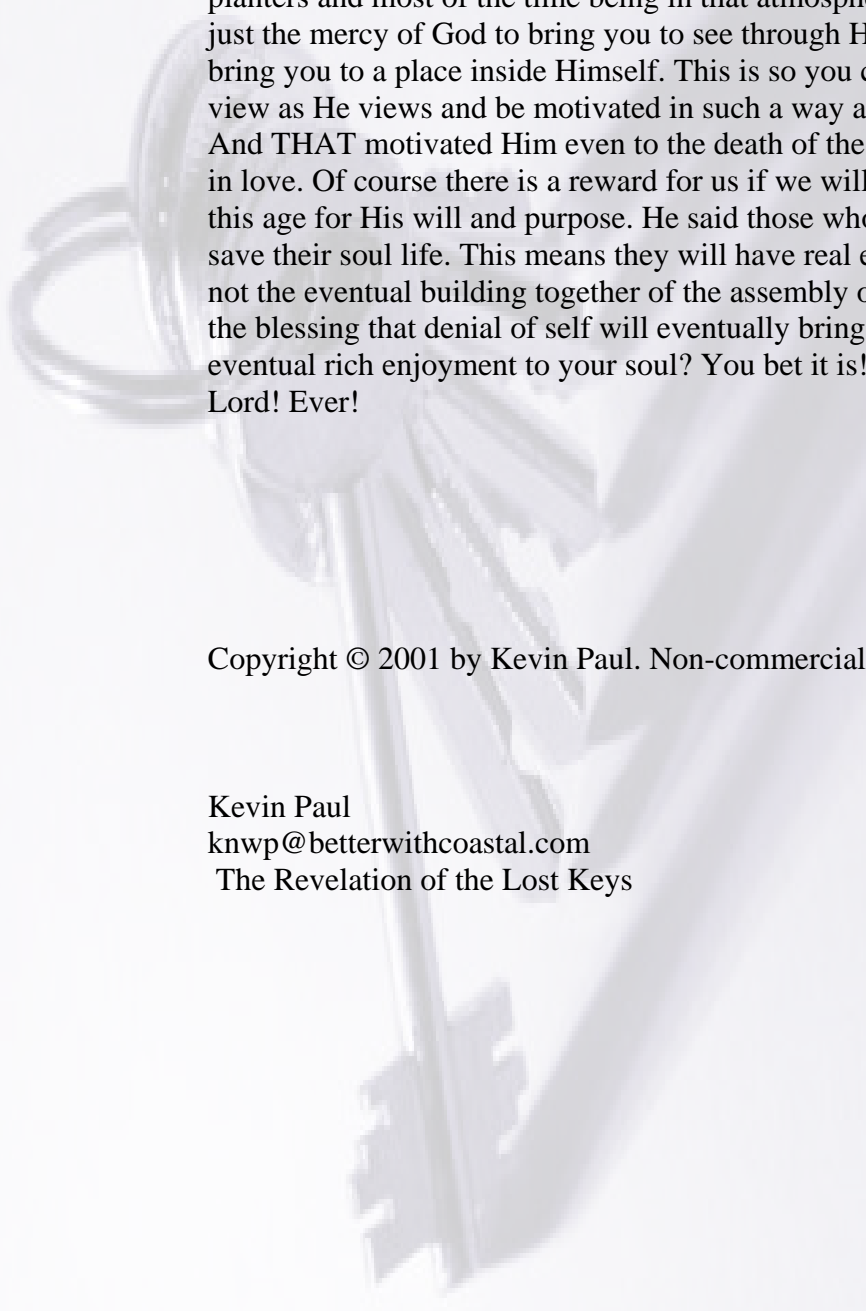
When these three things are done the self is locked and Satan can literally do nothing! Aw! Come on now! Yep! I knew what you were thinking! That sounds pretty hard: that is, to lock up yourself. But if all of us as believers would have this willingness and these keys working in our lives we would have no problems in our family life or our assembly life with other believers. It is not the false doctrines and various heresies that have worked the main damages to Christianity throughout the centuries. It has mostly been the workings of self and selfishness that has wrought the majority of the damages in the Kingdom as far as practicality is concerned.

So what is this denying of self? It means that we turn from our ways to His ways. It is the deep meaning and reality of what true repentance is. Wow! If this is the case we need to surely repent constantly. I'm not talking about a wallowing in the mire of mere regret here. But rather I mean a constant turning to God for direction supply and life.

Of course this won't mean much without the power of the cross. Here we must realize what the cross means to us. To the Lord it meant great suffering and He had to bear His cross before His death on the cross. To us it is the opposite. Suffering is NOT the true meaning of the cross. After you're dead suffering is OVER! Gone! God's purpose is not to make you suffer. It is to make you one with and in conformity to His Firstborn.... To eventually make us the Firstborn's entire counterpart. The meaning of the cross is not suffering but the first key to deny and turn from self is so we can do the will of God. If we are not from the heart embracing the will of God THAT IS NOT THE CROSS. The Lord willingly embraced His Father's will. If you suffer things in your life cause you think you have to and complain about it to boot, THAT, my brother is not the will of God or the cross. THAT is a mere execution or bad time and it's wasted! For the cross to have taken effect there had to be the matter of Jesus will and the Father's will settled in the Garden of Gethsemane first.

Marriage is an example of this. It is God's sovereignty as to who you married and it is His will. That's why divorce is against His will. But you can either be offended by your wife and endure the problems begrudgingly and it's just an execution or you can be a happy cross bearer! To willingly take God's will and accept it as your lot in life FROM the heart brings the power of the cross to cross out self and lock up self.

What about being offended? To cause offense is certainly self, but what about BEING offended and holding onto it. This is also self! This is the cause of arguing in marriage life and so many divisions among brethren. When the self is locked up it is extremely hard to offend you! Oh that we were even far away from ourselves and lost in Him!



The third key is to lose our soul life which means to lose psychological enjoyment. This means our aim is not to please ourselves but to please Christ. There are few today who are willing to lose the soul. There is just not much motivation for it. You see? Here's another one to chalk up for God's building and the revelation, which makes that building a reality. Without a revelation of God's heart's desire, His good pleasure and His eternal purpose there will be no motivation to motivate one to even be the slightest bit interested in denying oneself before the throne of God Himself! It was John Wesley writing on this same subject who seemed to say it all in the title of his sermon: "Who will you deny? Yourself? Or the Lord?" There just must be an actual view of things that are more important than ANY of your things or your not going to cut self loose! And THAT VIEW is usually only found either in the true and living assembly (or should I say building or tabernacling?) of Christ or through one of His church planters and most of the time being in that atmosphere alone is enough - its just the mercy of God to bring you to see through HIS EYES. He actually has to bring you to a place inside Himself. This is so you can see as He sees and to view as He views and be motivated in such a way as He is. It was this REAL LOVE. And THAT motivated Him even to the death of the cross! He must be in love. Soo in love. Of course there is a reward for us if we will lose our soul and self in this age for His will and purpose. He said those who lose their soul life will save their soul life. This means they will have real enjoyment in their soul. Is not the eventual building together of the assembly of the Lord into the Head and the blessing that denial of self will eventually bring to your family an eventual rich enjoyment to your soul? You bet it is! You cannot out-give the Lord! Ever!

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
The Revelation of the Lost Keys

## Chapter 12:

### Psalm 133: Anointing Oil From the Beard to the Hem of His Garments!

Now I'd like to share with you concerning the 2nd passage that was so meaningful to me during that time. Since there was so much said already concerning this passage I will not spend much time on this chapter. Since this book is about the keys of the kingdom I had to spend a lot time on that! Psalm 133, being one of the passages that was in my mind again and again concerning the Body of Christ was something the Holy Spirit was especially teaching me during that time frame, even through pre-arranged circumstances as I have already written. Here's the text:

{A Song of degrees. Of David.} 1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity! 2 Like the precious oil upon the head, that ran down upon the beard, upon Aaron's beard, that ran down to the hem of his garments; 3 As the dew of Hermon that descendeth on the mountains of Zion; for there hath Jehovah commanded the blessing, life for evermore.

This is one of the most beautiful Psalms in history. It is significant that the word "head" is used here and that of the high priest. It is amazing the mysterious writer of Hebrews denotes the high priest as being a type of Christ Who is our real High Priest and the fulfillment of the office of High Priest. But this High Priest is also our Head! We are His Body! It was Paul who got this revelation of the Body beyond all the others in his time-frame. This was probably due to the fact of the Lord's words to him when he was fallen to the earth under the Light of lights like a dead man: "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute Me?" This would be a strange question if we were not Jesus Christ! Paul was not persecuting some untouchable glorified Person who hung around up in the sky and called the sun His buddy! No! He was persecuting those poor Jewish believers on earth. But Jesus said "Me"! What did He mean by ME? He meant what He said of course! If the ETERNAL TRUTH said Me then He meant ME!!!! Maybe you have never considered these things. Maybe you have never considered that all the those high and holy things which are written of the glorious High Priest of the profession of our faith in the book of Hebrews were also written of you and pertain to you!!!!!!! Of course, this is not you by yourself only, but with all saints as the members of His Body. This is proved by the words: " Like the precious oil upon the head, that ran down upon the beard, upon Aaron's beard, that ran down to the hem of his garments " the same anointing that is upon (the same although it is not the highest!) Head of the one Body flows down upon all His members "even to the hem of His garments!" Now you have to think about this one: this IS real! But how is this to be made real in our experience? Obviously as we stay in our rightful organic place in the Body of Christ rightly related



to the other members, functioning as a medium of that life flow that flows through the members and properly under the Headship of Christ we will be in the flow. However, that is only too obvious to me. There is more to it. That is why the Psalmist under the unction of the Holy Spirit takes a different turn.

"As the dew of Hermon that descendeth on the mountains of Zion;" So this reality can happen in many different locations upon this earth BUT ..... who said Zion had mountains? I thought it was one mountain and Jerusalem was located upon it. Jerusalem, of course has great meaning in the scripture as being the city of the great King or the center of His government, administration, plan, fulfillment and this name is used of His Bride who is the crowning revelation and consummation of the eternal purpose and God's heart's desire. Jerusalem is also where the temple of God was built as a picture of God's dwelling place. So you can even in this short Psalm of 3 verses see volumes and volumes of revelation and YES there have been whole books written concerning the depths of the mines of unsearchable riches hidden within this Psalm. It is very significant.

It goes on to pinpoint a LOCATION for this flowing of ointment: "for there hath Jehovah commanded the blessing, life for evermore." There? There is where? Oh Oh! We forgot the 1st verse. The where is where brethren dwell together in unity. Now please tell me where that is, because this where has to exist or the Psalmist would have not been inspired by the Spirit of truth to write a lie by saying "THERE" and thereby mislead us! So, is it the so-called "Unitarian" "church" because the word "unity" is on a sign above their building? Of course that is nonsense! That does not even refer to the unity of the brethren. Of course the word unity has to be Biblically defined! And it cannot be according to my mere, little, narrow, silly, stupid, earthly and bull headed definition of it either! This is NOT the same as oneness. Oneness is organic and it is an organic fact of life that cannot be broken. The experience of the reality of this oneness CAN be effected by our condition, fellowship with God and our relatedness to unity with our brethren. And of course our relationship to the anointing which John in I John 2 says we already have can be radically affected by our relationship to that which I have just mentioned.

So what is Christian unity? I believe I have covered this in chapter 2 of this book, but if you want a more thorough coverage of the matter you should read the book "Further Talks on the Church Life" by Watchman Nee. It was Watchman Nee that saw the matter of one assembly for every one locality as being very plainly set forth in the New Testament. In fact, to be blunt about it. **THERE IS NO VARIATION FROM THIS PRINCIPLE WHATSOEVER IN THE NEW TESTAMENT!** There was just no other kind of unit. The unit is the one unit in the unit of the city. Just as there is one moon in Paris. One moon in New York city, one in Denver and etc. So God considers ALL His children in a particular locality which includes a city town or village **ONE ASSEMBLY**. He simply does not see or honor all these separate groupings of believers as being different "churches" with different names. This should be clear to us if we note the words of the Lord Jesus to John in Revelation 1:11 where He specifically mentions **SEVEN** ecclesias which were each

one in each of SEVEN localities. This is not just a Revelation thing. The whole New Testament follows suit. There is one other thing concerning unity. All of these assemblies throughout the earth are NOT separate "bodies" of believers. There is only one Body and that Body IS Christ according to Paul in I Cor. 12. So, even though all believers should be one with all others in a practical way for meeting together in their own locality, they should as much as possible still remember to fellowship with ALL believers as members together of the ONE Body of the one Head, Jesus Christ universally. So unity is both local and universal at the same time. Now when you are in fellowship with God and right with God and have come clean by confessing your sin, etc. AND you have come to the place that you really STAND with those who also STAND on the basis of being one ecclesia in one locality because you all simply agree with God on this matter then: THERE is the commanded blessing! This has been a BIG matter of a real fight over this in these latter days. It is because, without the living stones being brought to the same place to be together, how can they be built together? It is impossible! And Satan knows this! So of course he's going to fight this BIG TIME! In fact I wouldn't be surprised if he has tried over and over to keep you from reading this! I'm no help with all my discouraging words, either! But unless something higher than flesh and blood reveals these things to your heart I know that all these words are useless and I can only do nothing. So you see, this is not going to be received by everyone. This was a big issue in Charleston, South Carolina. As has been proved by history since that time. There was no meeting of god's people in Charleston who stood upon the ground of one assembly for one locality. There was NOT EVEN ONE GROUP OF CHRISTIANS WHO AGREED WITH GOD ON THIS MATTER AND WHO STOOD ON THIS GROUND IN THE WHOLE STATE OF SOUTH CAROLINA TILL WE TOOK A STAND! What happened to me there was a not just a personal sign to me. What happened to me in Charleston in 1983-1984 WAS A MONUMENT IN THE HISTORY OF CHRISTIANITY! IT WAS A SIGNPOST OF THE WAYS OF GOD BEING REVEALED TO MAN!

I have found through the years that this is really a matter of the heart. If God perceives that you CHOOSE to be there and nothing else will do BUT there then you are going to taste (perhaps for the first time like I did) the blessing. And THIS blessing is not an individual one but rather a corporate one. The ointment just flows and flows and flows THERE! Where? Where brethren dwell together in unity! There is just something about this blessing that surpasses all others! Now if the foundation stone of the confession of the revelation of the wonderful Christ is laid there there will really be something special. Even "life forever more." Hmmm ....so what is that? It is the abundant life Jesus spoke of in John 10. It is true that ALL believers have this life (which is pronounced "Zoe" in the Greek and refers to the divine kind of life or the uncreated incorruptible divine life of God which has been infused into us. Most of us have very little or no idea of the riches, qualities and capabilities of that life which we have within but all true believers have at least been touched by that life and know a

little by experience at least. So what is the difference between "life and have it more abundantly" or rather just life and abundant life? The life is individual (though not really) but to experience the abundant life you need to do it corporately. The life of Jesus in his Body is the very life of His Father which is the very life of God as Christ is God of very God being the very DNA or offspring of God and this "Son of the living God" upon Whom we are built by the same principle of DNA has given us yet still remains His very Own life which flows from member to member in His Body to express the Lord Jesus Himself! What a life! I will testify to the fact that in such a situation where the divisive self does not have its way, the heady new wine has a wineskin with no holes! It doesn't leak out! Then as long as you stay in a situation where you give and receive this flowing will still flow and not become a dead sea! Believe me, from THAT kind of relationship the words of Ezekiel can easily come to pass: there were waters to swim in and a multitude of fish!





## Chapter 13

### Concerning the Bride: Genesis 1 & 2 / Revelation 21 & 22: The Introduction and Conclusion of the Entire Bible

Now THIS is probably the most important objective and subjective truth that any believer can ever become aware of after being regenerated by the new birth. After one is born again he needs more than anything else to be motivated by the love of God in Christ.

Consider this fact: most books have an introduction and a conclusion. This is also true concerning the Bible. The Bible of course is the God breathed scripture consisting of 66 books, 39 Old Testament, and 27 New Testament books. You may not think these books have anything to do with one another but they build upon one another. In a sense it is considered to be all one book. Isaiah says to read in the book of the Lord. This is found in Isaiah 34:16:  
16 "Search from the book of the LORD, and read: Not one of these shall fail; Not one shall lack her mate. For My mouth has commanded it, and His Spirit has gathered them."

Obviously he was not referring merely to his own prophetic writings but to the writings of other books of the Bible as well. To continue: it has been said very well that if you want to get an overview of a book you should start by reading the introduction or prologue, etc. first then read the conclusion or epilogue. By doing this you will get an overview of the subject of the book and you will see where it starts and where its going. Then after you read through the book you can get an even clearer "bird's eye view" by reading the introduction and conclusion again

Many readers of the Bible have gotten lost in the forest because they do not know the ultimate goal of the Bible. When you know the ultimate goal or consummation of scripture then you have an inkling of the ultimate goal of God and what His aims and desires are. From this standpoint you can form some idea of what his will is. Otherwise you could get "lost in the forest." In other words if you are in the middle of the forest somewhere (like starting your Christian life by reading the book of Romans for instance) without looking at the map from a birds eye view you will get lost! You need to know where you are in relation to where the starting point on the map and the destination point. If you didn't take the time to look at the map then you could easily get on some winding side-road somewhere in the forest on some tangent or even out on a limb somewhere.

The words: "the eternal purpose" is only used once in the entire Bible. But those words denote the fact that there is an ultimate aim or an ultimate

intention in the plan of God. It is my belief that the majority of the divisions in today's Christianity result from the problem of having different goals and sources from which those goals came. We need to see the beginning and the end and then draw a straight line between the two or we will continue to waste such precious time. If we do not see what God's eternal purpose is and have other purposes in our heart or other ideas and concepts of what God's ultimate purpose is contrary to what it really is then we are going to be divided. This is a matter of grave importance today or any day for that matter! There has never been a time in which we have needed the outpouring which according to Acts takes place when the believers are in one mind, one place and in one accord, than today. Praying together in such a situation brings a veritable Pentecost.

Since I have already answered the question as to what the introduction and conclusion of the Bible are the obvious next question you may ask is why do you single out those 4 chapters? The word "Genesis" means "beginnings" or in other words: the seeds or genes of things which are to develop take root and grow into a harvest later on. The seeds of nearly every spiritual reality and truth can be found in Genesis. And most of all of these is harvested in Revelation. Along with this fact we also should pay attention to the fact that there is no sin in these four chapters. Now there is mention in Rev 21 & 22 of the evil things outside the city in the outer darkness of the eternal trash can of the universe of course. However it must be noted that these things are mentioned after the fact of Rev. 20:15. It is there that we find that all things from death and all things from Hades had already been disposed of in the Lake of Fire and nothing of that element can ever enter the realms of life and light ever again! Do you notice something here? The very last sentence just before Rev. 21 & 22 speaks of the ending of sin. Whereas the very first sentence after Gen. 1 & 2 speaks of the first beginning of sin or the introduction of it to our race. This was not done by accident but was planned by the very Spirit of God Who breathed the scriptures onto the printed page through those who wrote the holy scriptures. My point is? Genesis 1 & 2 and Revelation 21 & 22 contain the seeds and the harvest of the spiritual things that are absolutely pure and positive ONLY!!! There are many items that are the very heart throb of God that you can see the beginning and consummation thereof. Now, doesn't this make sense? Do we not need such a telescope into the heart of God that we may see what is His ultimate goal and plan? Surely we do. This is what some so-called "ministries" today do not want to face: namely, that there was some meaning to life BEFORE sin entered the scene and there will be also AFTER it's gone! So much so in fact that we will need an eternity and will not even begin to scratch the surface of exhausting all the wonders of the life in store for us! And for Him! What glory and beauty awaits Him! And here's my point: my prayer for you is that you may catch at least a glimpse of that BEAUTIFUL girl He is so madly in love with that you may get the "click" of realization as to why the Lord Jesus was willing to go to Calvary and that you may know the real reason why for Him it is worth it all!! She is worth it all!!! Well worth it all!!! PRAISE THE LORD!!

And just who is this most lovely she, pray tell, and what is her name? The New Jerusalem is the subject, the very last and greatest subject of the Bible. And here I must say that though I agree with many others that JESUS CHRIST is THE main subject of the Bible that does not change what I have said about the New Jerusalem as Paul said that the glory of the man is the woman and she is the glory of human kind so the New Jerusalem -- She is the outshining and ultimate glory of the Lamb, the Christ! Not only is this the great (the greatest!) subject of the last two chapters, which fact should tell us it is more important to God than anything else He could ever reveal, but it is the consummation of the divine revelation in the Bible! It is the harvest of all the seeds planted in the first 2 chapters completely grown and matured. This is called by John in Rev. 21:9 & 10, "the bride, the Lamb's wife." Of course, the seed forms in Genesis of these things were real things of the material realm and pictures of the spiritual whereas the writings of John in revelation are material pictures but obviously talking of spiritual things. If you believe that the wife of the Lamb of God is a material city made of literal material gold then the husband is also white with white wool and has four legs and a tail because he is a material lamb! C'mon now, let's get real! Christ being called the Lamb of God is because He was the sacrifice for our sins. So then what is the meaning of the New Jerusalem? She is us! SHE IS THE MAIN ELEMENT OF THE ETERNAL PURPOSE AND SHE IS THE MAIN REASON WHY JESUS CHRIST BECAME THE LAMB! This is proved by Paul's words in Ephesians 5: 23-25: "For the husband is the head of the wife, and Christ also is the head of the church, being himself the savior of the body. 24. But as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives also be to their husbands in everything. 25. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself up for it;" Here we see that the ecclesia or rather "us" stands in the same relation to Christ as wives to their husbands, vice versa. Well then, if she is the people of God in Ephesians 5, she is also the people of God in Revelation 21 & 22! God is not into divorce. He is not interested in divorcing His people for some material city of gold!!!! My conclusion to this matter is???? The New Jerusalem is NOT a material composition or building or place! It is spiritual. And can be called "it: because there is the aspect and reality of the city of God but on the other hand she is the realest she, a real live person that has ever been!! And she can rightly be called she because she is the living counterpart and bride of the Lamb and this living one was taken out of His very life and nature!

Now you are going to ask what is meant by "taken out of life and nature" and how such a thing could be. Here we must refer to Biblical truth concerning who Adam is in Biblical interpretation in relationship to Christ. It is in Romans chapter 5 that we find out the deep meaning of Adam and how to interpret his story to find the deeper truths of Christ that pertain to these four chapters concerning the eternal purpose of God. Romans 5:14: "Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the likeness of Adam's transgression, who is a figure of him that was to come." Now if Adam was the figure of Christ Who was to come then we can realize that Adam's story contains a meaning deeper than we might have noticed at first glance. We can also ask:



"if Adam is a prefigure of Christ then who is Eve a prefigure of?" But even as Paul mentions the relationship between Adam and Eve as having to do with this great mysterious fact of Christ and the ecclesia so we should also look into these things even as Paul did. These are deep mysteries indeed.

Right here we need to take a minute to expose a very damaging false teaching that has seriously damaged God's purpose today and caused His viewpoint to remain a hidden viewpoint. There are many false teachings being discussed and attacked today but much of this attack only barely touches on the branches and twigs of the problem of truth and does not lay the ax of the truth and reality of God to the ROOT of the tree. Our hearts and our heart's desires and motifs are at the root and are the things that really make us or break us. If our purposes are the same as God's purposes and we have drank deeply of His heart's desire and are in deep sympathy with the Lord we shall be united and shall be OK. However if we have some other goal other than His goal due to a lack of revelation concerning the eternal purpose, we shall be distracted and divided. So what is this false teaching which has been an element of extensive damages? You may be surprised at what I'm about to expose. There have been many men that have taught that John 14:1-3 concerning the many mansions is that these mansions are huge houses up in the sky and that the Lord's going in this passage is His ascension. They go on to say that His coming again to "receive you to Myself" is the 2nd coming of Christ in our future. This is false! If you'll take the time to read the context of these 3 chapters: John 14, 15 & 16, you will see that His going away from His disciples was His death. His return would be His resurrection and His abiding with them and making His abode with them was the real meaning of the so-called "mansions" which in the Greek is really "abodes." WE are the abodes of God! We are the rooms in the Father's house! And Christ went to the cross to prepare a place inside Himself built together as living stones in His abode as branches of the Vine of this abode where we need to abide. We are living stones by virtue of His coming forth in His resurrection life and infusing us with that life, that new life! Do you see why I have mentioned this false teaching? It is just one more pea in Satan's pod that casts another shadow upon our minds to cast veil after veil upon our understanding of the New Jerusalem. It is not a physical place to go when you die! (Maybe Paradise is)... rather it is a heavenly, spiritual reality within us right now!

Some Important Elements That Are the same in the First 2 And Last 2 Chapters of the Bible

There are many aspects of things that can be found in the first two chapters of Genesis which can also be found in the last two chapters of Revelation that I consider extremely important as items that need to be revealed to you by the Spirit of God and I hope you would at least spend some time in the Word, petitioning the Lord to have mercy on you and shine His light upon you that you

would have a real revelation of Christ in these things. There are possibly many other items and even countless items that are found in both passages so possibly I have missed a few. However, these I would consider the most important. I would entitle this list as the "Elements of the Garden and City."

- ✚ Couple
- ✚ Image & extension for glory.
- ✚ Wounded Husband with an issue from His side.
- ✚ Body broken, rib built, 2 become one body again.
- ✚ Tree of fruit
- ✚ River
- ✚ Gold
- ✚ Pearls
- ✚ Precious stones
- ✚ Dominion
- ✚ The #s 3 & 4=7 then  $3*4$  becomes 12, 1st addition then multiplication.
- ✚ DNA from husband's side as material for:
- ✚ Building!
- ✚ A habitat
- ✚ Leaving the father to be joined to his bride, and becoming one flesh.

This must be explained, as it is not easily seen. You may find this hard to believe but it has taken centuries for the seers, sent ones, prophets and many other men of God to put these things together in the Word of God and to actually have come to see these passages as clearly as we see them today.

Now this is really exciting. There is a couple in both these passages. Adam and Eve in Genesis 1 & 2 are a picture of the Lamb and the New Jerusalem in Revelation 21 & 22. But how are they related? If you look at the story of Adam and Eve and put all the pieces of the picture together as I have listed above you just may get into the right position and angle to where at least a ray of Heavenly Sonlight may beam your way! Let's try to assemble this puzzle. Genesis chapter 1 is so different from Genesis chapter 2 in that the first chapter is unbelievably majestic and flows in logical sequence. However Genesis 2 is like a disjointed cartoon. 1st there is a recount of creation, then a mentioning of God's rest and a more detailed version moving back in time of just how Adam was made from the ground (which ground by the way signifies resurrection) and breathed into. Then it speaks of the 2 trees in the midst of the garden and their names.. After this it mentions the river breaking into four heads (and who knows why!?!). All of a sudden it talks about the gold of that land and briefly mentions there is also there the bdellium and onyx stone. Again why??? What was that all about? Has anyone asked these questions? Thank God, yes! After this there is mention of Adam's employment, but no Eve. Then comes God's commandment concerning one of the trees and His sanction following. After this God says there is something not good! That man is alone is not good! This is before sin

and there's something not good! Wow! Now that's significant and that should at least tell you something. If you add the fact of this "not good" with the fact of His one and only "very good!" in Genesis 1 THAT should tell you something: namely that the "very good" came after Eve was joined to her husband and man was completed. But notice the crazy order here. First He mentions this not good in seeming conference in the Godhead and then goes on to do something else! He gives man a special job of naming all the animals and then puts him to sleep, opens his side, takes out his rib and makes Eve with it! Then the most insightful principles of marriage ever spoken upon which almost everything else as far as good counsel for marriage can be based is spoken there in 3 principles which could be summed up in 3 words: 1. Leave, 2. Cleave and 3. Unite. Let's face it, there could never be an old testament person who could ever figure this order out. But in this New Testament age it has become clearly revealed that this order is precisely the breathing of God breathing out His Word trying to convey to us His living Word through the written scriptures. So let's deal with some of these facts in the order in which they are written.

1st, let's cover some facts in Genesis 1:27-31, " 27. And God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. 28. And God blessed them: and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the heavens, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. 29. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb yielding seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for food: 30. and to every beast of the earth, and to every bird of the heavens, and to everything that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for food: and it was so. 31. And God saw everything that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And there was evening and there was morning, the sixth day. "

1st , for everything God made He said it was good but when He made man and notice the statement "male and female made He them," He said it was "very good." Why is this? Of course it is because man is God's crowning creation and the very center of His purpose and without whom His purpose could not be fulfilled. But this lame answer is not sufficient to show us what that purpose is. However, if I repeat the words as they are written verbatim in this passage enough times maybe you will see something. What are we talking about first? We were made in God's image and likeness. Surely there is purpose here. There was no other item in God's creation made in His image. There were many things made after certain kinds, for example there is the canine family, the feline family, the fish type of creature with its gills for getting air from water, etc., but only man was made according to GOD's kind! It has been said that as a glove was made in the image of a hand to contain the hand, so man was made in the image of God to contain God. It is obvious here that no other being or creature in heaven above or earth beneath can be a partaker of God's very life and nature but that is what John 3:16's precious promise is to those who choose to be the "whosoever" that believes in Christ: everlasting life. And that word for life is Zoe in the



Greek, which means the divine life which is eternal, uncreated and flawless. Only human beings have the capacity of the human spirit to receive the divine life with all of its innate capacities and capabilities into themselves! No other species (not even angels!!!) possess the capacity for such a reception! Wow! We don't really even begin to know what capabilities we have lost in the fall (even though Adam had not even received the life of God at that time) or what we still have even though we are fallen, much less the unfathomable wonders of the very life of God! Neither do we know too much about what we will be as God's redeemed in the coming glorification!! Though it is true that we have been made in our fallen condition a lower life form in this present age than the angels are right now, the day will come when they won't have anything on us!! Hallelujah! God has such a high life and position for the redeemed that you cannot even begin to imagine it! Hallelujah!

Wow! It sure was hard to not get onto that tangent! But now we are going to touch on something even FAR more glorious!!!!!! And this is our subject. Now, what could be more glorious than our glorification, exaltation and beautification in the future? Oh! Just the real meaning of what the reality of being in the image of God is. That's all!!!! Let's take a look at this: "in the image of God created He him, male and female created He them." Wow! "created He him...them" "created He him ..... them!" I'm confused! Did He create him or them? "created He him, male and female..." Hmmm, I thought the him was a male. Have you ever considered this? So why are WE humans made in the image of God, but the angels are not? Let's take a look at the main difference between human beings and angelic beings. It seems the main difference is that the angels habitat is heavenly or spiritual and man's is merely physical. But even that is not the main difference, nor is it even TRUE !!!! Man has an element that no other creature on earth possesses and even for a time (seemingly?) God Himself did not possess. Man had a spirit and a body! Now of course God WAS Spirit but He was not yet flesh (the story of the 3 men visiting Abraham may prove me wrong of course since the Lord is not limited to time like we are) and blood so He was spiritual only and had not yet caught up to man. So it is not true that man cannot touch the spiritual realm.

Let me get to the point: the angels were all single! That's the way God made everything in the spiritual realm! However, seemingly, almost ALL of the creatures in the physical realm were made in twos, pairs and there was seen (with probably astonishment, much wonder and amazement) by the angels many different kinds of creatures with the aspect of male and female, two of a kind with the ability to pro-create and multiply and increase their species (you see! Us men are not the only pro-creators in the universe!)? So, all the creatures in the spiritual realm are single but in the material realm are made in couples! WOW! What does this mean?

So it seems we've gotten off of the subject of what is the image of God, but hear this: first came the him, then the them! But before Adam was them (even



that's not a Bible teaching either! OK let's get back.

Of course there was a big problem for Jehovah to get His Bride. She would have to match Him! She would have to have the very same life and nature as what He has! How in the universe or even beyond the universe could God accomplish such a thing? It is almost inconceivable. Could even the mind of God conceptualize it? My beloved brothers and dear sisters: God has always held this within, even to infinitude of eternal ages past and past and past farther than you could imagine. It has always been there. This longing; this searching; this travail; this agony. Agony????????????? ?????????????????? Before the fall? Do you really mean there was actually something that was not good before the fall?

Well ..... have you ever considered the awful suffering conveyed in the verse as revealed in holy writ in Revelation 13:8? ("**and all that dwell on the earth shall do it homage, every one whose name had not been written from the founding of the world in the book of life of the slain Lamb.**")

This took place in the ages before even the foundation of the world, namely, the Lamb of Calvary was slain. Oh! How could this awful thing be? What dark mystery is this? Could this possibly have taken place? Before the foundation, before even creation was there...pain? Could this possibly have something to do with this beautiful girl this Lamb was love sick over? If you're going to pick up stones to stone me, do it now! Only a man who has seen her beauty could suffer for Christ's name's sake. Only one who knows the Divine Romance can get stoned like Paul did and go right back into the same city that stoned him (he was stoned!) and preach again! What a mad man! Only a Jesus Christ Who was blindly and madly in love with this most beautiful girl could endure the ignominy, the horror, the shame, the utter lowest bloody ugliness of the most dreadful torture of Golgotha!

"It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him." .... Surely, it is not good for man to be alone! Of course now that there are so many people companionship does not come merely from marriage. But he was created with longings and desires that mirrored the very image and likeness of his Creator, God! That lonely man was made in the very spitting image of .... "you've got to be kidding, right!?" OK; Now it seems we are ready to look at Genesis finally in the exact order in which it was written:

A Problem: the Creation had been Finished

Now we can approach Genesis 2, hopefully with the proper "infrared vision" so to speak. Genesis 2 begins with the finishing of the first creation. After the job was finished God rested on the seventh day. Now this is no problem if you don't take the time to think about it. But it seems that the events concerning God taking the rib out of Adam's side and producing Eve, his dear wife, seemed to take place after the 6 day creation was accomplished. And the truth of God's



Word declares that the first creation was finished on the sixth day! Now, you may say that God actually did bring Eve forth from Adam's side on the 6th day and there seems to be some evidence for this plus the fact that Genesis 2 could possibly just be a recount of things that took place on that day. However, I don't believe she had appeared yet based on the following: 1. The scriptures seem to place special emphasis on the fact of God having finished His creation work and this is offset by the ordination of the seventh day of rest. This seems to stress the fact that Adam had a time of loneliness and had some time for all of this to sink in. 2. There does not seem to be enough time for Adam to do the tremendous task of naming all of the creatures including birds, birds, fish and all the various reptiles, etc. especially considering that there were species at that time that are extinct right now. Right now there are 9703 known species of birds alone. Since the 1600's there have been 115 species of birds that have gone extinct. Altogether the count, including fish, mammals, reptiles and insects (if indeed Adam went that far: the Genesis record does not mention fish) is 1,072,300 million known species (-fish) have been identified by science. It is estimated that by the year 2050 1/4 of those species will go extinct. The extinction rate has gone way up of course due to our modern (yeah, blame it on man) world but my point is that today's science could not possibly know how many species have gone extinct since 6000 years ago. They only have some knowledge before the 1600's and their tracing ability even back to that date is questionable. It is a known fact that in the unsearchably rich Amazon Rain forest new species of animals are still being discovered! Even considering the fact that God supernaturally brought all of the animals to Adam such as He later did for Noah, still ... Even if you consider that his brain was sharper before the fall ...still it seems preposterous. Actually you could bring the number of animals down to their grass roots as it must have been for Noah to 35,000 which would be the number that everything we know about today could have multiplied back into what we have in the present world again. Consider this fact: before the fall the number of species on earth was complete: there were NO extinct species. At least you have to consider that Adam took some real time at it enough to have some fun! You better believe it!

My point in saying all of this has to do with the heart of God. For God to obtain a Bride is not an easy thing. If the Lord God were to actually have a mate, she would have to have the same life and nature as He, but did not Peter say we are partakers of the divine nature? The bottom line is that in creating Adam in his own image Adam's "out of Adam" or his "she" was also created in him. And as there was a longing and a measure of difficulty in obtaining a bride for the Lord, so there was the same case scenario for the one made in his image and likeness. This is why I believe that the naming of the animals made an impression on Adam. The impression made was that none of these creatures were "like" him but all of them had mates and he didn't. This opens up a wide realm of the revelation of the reality inside the heart of your Lord, but here I must refer you to what I believe is the greatest work ever written in the 20th century: "The Divine Romance" by Gene Edwards. This book is considered one of

three written in the 20th century that could be considered in a class by themselves as Christian literature not merely Christian writings. But there is more to it than this: this brother was obviously inside the heart of God when he wrote and it seems as if he were actually in sync with the heartbeat of God as he wrote. I refer you to that book for far more insight into this subject. In fact in this case I would get on my hands and knees and beg you to read it. It is a must read. OK now I must try to take Genesis 2 in order. It is obvious to me that the inspiring Spirit inspired the idea of the completion of creation as the first basic thought of this chapter. I will explain what I believe is the divine reason for all of this in the further progressions of this chapter. You can almost made to feel a satisfying sense of completion as you read the account of His day of rest.

Next, it seems I am wrong about Eve actually coming around later because there is a recount of the "history" of creation beginning with the plant life, more details of how Adam was actually made from the ground with the very breath of God, etc. BUT if you read the actual sequence of events there is quite a gap between Adam's creation and Eve's building (building is the literal Hebrew word used). These things include Adam tilling the garden, receiving instructions concerning the tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, and his big job of naming the animals. Inserted in this record are some very important elements that later become the exact constituents of the real building, the final and greatest building of God: the tree of life, the river, the gold, bdellium and onyx stone. It is interesting that these things are mentioned BETWEEN the arrival of Adam and the arrival of Eve because she was built! And building is what these things are all about! In fact this is about that which is MORE IMPORTANT THAN ANYTHING ELSE TO GOD!!!! We have got to get clear on this! Let's take a further look. "8 The LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there He put the man whom He had formed. 9 And out of the ground the LORD God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food. The tree of life was also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. 10 Now a river went out of Eden to water the garden, and from there it parted and became four river heads. 11 The name of the first is Pishon; it is the one which skirts the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold. 12 And the gold of that land is good. Bdellium and the onyx stone are there. 13 The name of the second river is Gihon; it is the one which goes around the whole land of Cush. 14 The name of the third river is Hiddekel; it is the one which goes toward the east of Assyria. The fourth river is the Euphrates."

Let's see, in John 15 Jesus calls Himself the vine and in John 14 (and elsewhere) He calls Himself the life. So the tree of life is Jesus Christ! What about the talk of the river breaking into four heads. Well, since both the tree of life and the river of the water of life are also both mentioned together in Rev. 22: 1 & 2, these must be significant. It was the Lord Jesus again Who must have considered these 2 things extremely important because He spoke of rivers of living water as springing forth from the believer whosoever would come to Him to

drink. This must be extremely vital for drinking is also mentioned in John 4. But in Genesis 2 there are 3 elements mentioned parallel to this food and water. Hmmm. John went on to say in John 7 that Jesus was referring to the Spirit Who was not yet because Jesus was not yet glorified. What is this? Well this is not so simple. It was Paul who explained it in I Corinthians 15:45b:

"The last Adam became a life-giving spirit."

This is the chapter on resurrection of course. Of course there was the Holy Spirit before Christ's crucifixion and resurrection but not the same! The term "the Spirit" has never been seen before this part of the Bible. Go ahead! Read it for yourself and you will see. When the term "the Spirit" is seen in the Bible it refers to the Wonderful Christ Who became in order to give us Himself in all His sin killing, new life-giving power and divine nature! Now, we even have His up-raised new creation, perfect human nature within us! The power of His death and the renewing, transforming healing and enlivening quickening of His resurrection are now new elements of "the Spirit" which "the Spirit of God" did not contain before His resurrection! Praise the Lord! And how do we partake of this? By eating and drinking! How? "Come to Me and drink" Jesus said. And what is the result? Now a river went out of Eden to water the garden, and from there it parted and became four river heads. 11 The name of the first is Pishon; it is the one which skirts the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold. 12 And the gold of that land is good. Bdellium and the onyx stone are there. OK. So I have already spoken of gold as one of the main elements of building as spoken to Moses in the passages of Exodus concerning the building of the wilderness tabernacle which the writer of Hebrews seems to be quite taken up with to the point that he says he doesn't really have the time to expound these things such as he would have liked to. So it is obvious why gold and these other 2 elements are mentioned here in genesis because when we eat Christ and drink Christ we take Him in as not only our life but our life supply AND SO THE DIVINE NATURE THROUGH FAITH WHICH IS WHAT GOLD REFERS TO IN THE BIBLE GROWS WITHIN US!! THIS IS GLORIOUS!!!

So what does Bdellium refer to? It refers to a gum or resin found in certain trees. The tree must be cut to get the gum out and is a shiny substance. Many writers and students of the Bible have compared the substance to pearls. Bdellium is even said to be pearls in some cases Pearls are produced by the same method. The oyster has to be cut and it produces a shiny substance around the wound, which has been produced by sand. Nelson's Bible dictionary gives this definition:

Bdellium. A substance found in Havilah in Arabia, a land noted for its precious stones and aromatic gum. With the same color as manna, bdellium was considered to be a gum resin (Num. 11:7).

In the Numbers passage, the word for bdellium is rendered as bdellium (REB) and resin (NIV) by some translations. But in Genesis 2:12, bdellium was associated



with gold and therefore it was considered a precious stone. Some scholars suggest that bdellium jewels were pearls from the Persian Gulf.

The meaning here is that as we come to Christ to partake of Him as food and drink we are like the irritating sand in the oyster and the resin or protective substance forms around the grain so as to protect itself. This substance is compared with Christ making us new within Himself by resurrection. We wounded Him at His heart by our sin but the flow from His side turns the horrible sharp grain of sand into a precious pearl. You can see by this a wound to the side and something wonderful produced out of this TWICE in the 2nd chapter of the Bible! This must really be important! Now, I have a question. If this is so important that God mentions it twice at the beginnings of His Word, how come so little attention is given to these things from today's so called preachers? Of course in the New Jerusalem gold is the street (just one street? Yep!!). And pearls are the gates of the city (which are also the sent ones or the 12 disciples, by the way) for an entrance (which is also the meaning of the pillars in Solomon's temple which were the supports of the entrance).

What about precious stones? This subject is mentioned many times in scripture. Take I Cor. 3: 11-13: "1 For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, 13 each one's work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. " One thing is for sure, this is something you surely want in your life because once it is there it is something solid and can never go away! What is it's meaning. Science can tell you plainly. Precious stones are transformed materials. They start out as one element and through a process become another element or combination of elements through various stressful, material altering, pressurizing and temporizing conditions. In order for precious stones to be produced there usually must be years and even centuries of pressure and heat. This is why they are precious. Consider the diamond for one example. What did it used to be at one time? Black coal! Coal is not only black and dirty but it's dirt rubs off on other things! II Cor 3:18 contains one of the elements that is also necessary to be transformed and that is to actively behold the Lord in a loving seeking kind of a way. Surely this is something powerful, for both Isaiah and John the Baptist tell us that to look to Him will even bring salvation. John the Baptist said "Behold the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world. How sad it is that there is little or no preaching these days on beholding Christ which equals contemplation.

Contemplation experience is what really changes you inwardly and the Lord's grace will also operate along with it and start the transforming experience. However, I will not be dishonest with you concerning the other means the Lord uses to transform us living stones to cause us to become precious stones fit to be built into His City. It is sufferings, trials, and fiery tribulations in a fiery furnace. Not all the things we pass through during the journey of our

Christian life will be fun or easy. If you compare the record of Genesis 2 with revelation 21, there seems to be only one kind of precious stone to start with but in revelation 21 there are 12 meaning there are many situations ages special situations and developments of the unsearchable character and unsearchable riches of the virtues of Christ and the fruit of the Spirit that it seems to take on many beautiful colors when finished. At one point the writer says the City is like one awesome precious stone looking exactly like the precious One Who looks like a jasper stone upon the throne. John even goes so far as to say she is a precious precious stone that is crystal clear! Through her can be clearly seen her glorious Lord Who lives and shines out from within! I have met brothers whom have had visions of this city and I have asked "what were the walls made of? Their answer was? Light! That's right; if the Light of the world is shining through that which is crystal clear then who will be seen? Will it be the one through whom the light is shining or the light?

Now here is the point of these three elements in Gen. 2:12. These and ONLY these three elements are the makeup and material with which the New Jerusalem, the wife of the Lamb is built with. Nothing else! In Revelation 17:4 it says: 4 The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication. Now this verse refers to the false church, the mystery Babylon, the harlot, which represents something God hates because she mixes politics, commerce, and other abominable idolatries and religious things with the things of God. So mixed with other things you see that she is adorned with the three items: "gold and precious stones and pearls" but he is not built with them and them alone. What about our work today? What are we building with? Is it something out of eating and drinking Christ? Is it that which flows forth or has already flowed forth from His side or is it something of our natural life and birth; something out of the thought of man? At this point God showed man the 2 trees. The principle of the 2 trees is obvious. Christ as the tree of life so we eat Him and He assimilates into the very fiber of our being and we grow in his life and nature and even live on the strength of this food day by day. So the principle here is dependence upon God and upon His life within. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil on the other hand is something done outside of, without and against God or in the principle of independence. This again tells us that the result of the corruption of death will come from independence upon the Lord and that which is precious comes from the Tree of Life. At this point the Lord said " It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him a helper comparable to him.( )" But the question I ask again is, "so why does He not do something immediately? Why does He interject (or at least Moses does in his story line) the naming of the animals here? Surely if the events were not in this exact order and Eve indeed was built on the 6th day, still the Holy Spirit inspired this order in his breathing this order through the inspired writer of holy writ. I believe the reason to be found in verse 20: " So Adam gave names to all cattle, to the birds of the air, and to every beast of the field. But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him. ( )" It was here many

believe that during this what I believe was a big job, Adam realized that all the animals coming to him all had mates but as they came he also realized there was no one who could be a mate for him. This is really an exaltation of what the human nature is. The key here is that none of the animals out of thousands of species had his life and nature! There was no one like him or suited to be his counterpart or help meet on the earth. Possibly he began feeling his loneliness, for that is what it was. When God said "it is not good for man to be alone," He was also saying "it is not good for God to be alone." Now surely you will say God was not alone as He has always been Father, Son and Holy Spirit. Yes, but there was felt a strong desire to extend this wonderful fellowship in the Godhead or God would not have begun to create. He would not have any reason to if it had not been a good thing to do. But even the man God created could not be HIS counterpart until later when men could be born again and become partaker of HIS nature.

At this point I must briefly mention the difficulty. Gene Edward's "Divine Romance" does the best job here so I would hope that you would read that. It is far better than this chapter, but basically he mentions the fact based on the premise that Eve was not in the flesh as of yet after the first week of creation. This causes the difficulty of the creation of God having been finished already. Gene has a case scenario of what must have been the touching conversation between the two (both being bachelors) as Adam and his Lord walked by cool of the day in the garden. It was here perhaps God asked the question: "Adam is everything that I have made good?" Since God's creation was finished as declares His word, to get Adam a mate after creation is already through would pose a problem.

There are three Hebrew words used for "create" in these first two chapters of the Bible, which are very interesting here. The first is found once and once only. We do not really know how many years or millenniums ago Genesis 1:1 really took place. We can only speculate it. However you look at it you can't change this Hebrew word or its meaning. "In the beginning God created: It means to create something out of nothing. There was no other thing to form the material things with. The rest of the words found in the record translated "make" or "create" mean to make something out of something, for example, Adam was made of the dust of the ground and so were the animals. But there is one more word and again it is used once and once only and I believe it was AFTER the 6-day creation that it happened because she was actually and really created out of the dust of the ground the very moment Adam was created. Anyway, that word means to build. Eve was built! She and she alone of all the creatures in God's creation was built! Yes, and I do believe she is the crown of all of God's creation and the most beautiful creation that He ever made except for the new creation. And just how difficult was this transaction between Adam and God? Well, I do not believe God is a thief, so I would have to think that He fellowshiped with Adam concerning what He was about to do. The question is, was there blood? Or did God somehow operate without the shedding of blood and remove a rib from Adam's side?



All we know is that this was easier for Adam than it was for the Lord because the REAL Adam, the Last Adam, Christ suffered the worst death of all in fulfillment of this picture of which Adam was the type. Adam was the figure of Christ. So Adam's deep sleep signified Christ's death. The rib from out of His side signified the blood and water from the side of Christ. What does this blood and water signify to US! Let's get this straight, OK? It is everything! It is the whole New Testament! The NT consists of 2 ministries. Later on these 2 ministries became one in Christ. Don't let anyone tell you today that that Christian magazine that we see on the News stands today called "Ministries" has a valid title. If you study the NT you will find there is only one ministry (see Acts 1) and it is God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ through the Holy Spirit dispensing Himself into man. There is one flowing river and it flows from one throne. The fact that there were two elements there at the cross, I will explain. At first there were two ministries to bring in the New Testament. There was John the Baptist, who could not properly be called Old testament or New Testament as he was a transition phase or a bridge from the one to the other. And his job is? To terminate you!!! He came to baptize and that means to bury the dead! And that's all we're good for! We need a new life because the old is hopeless and that's the real meaning of the words of Jesus: you must be born again. This must is an absolute must. So what was Christ's ministry as explained by this same man, whom Jesus described to be the greatest of all prophets? John the Baptist said in Matthew 3:11,12, "I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. 12 "His winnowing fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clean out His threshing floor, and gather His wheat into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." Christ's job? To germinate you!!! This He accomplishes by the new birth.

Here we see the New Testament has two aspects: 1. To terminate our old creation. This Christ did on the cross when He crucified the whole world with Himself and terminated it and then it was buried with Him along with you and I and everything else. This can be found in Galatians 6:14 which say that the world has been crucified to the believer and vice versa. 2. To germinate the new creation. To baptize with water is to bury that which came from the first Adam and put it away. To baptize with the Holy Spirit is to give you a brand new life and baptize you into the Body of Christ, who is the 2nd man of the new creation. These two necessary baptisms are mentioned again in John 3, the famous chapter on the new birth: 5 Jesus answered, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. 6 "That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit." The water here is for burial of the old which is what John did but the Spirit is renewing the new into new life. This is the real meaning of the blood and water taken out of Jesus side. Except that the meaning of the water changed in that context to be the positive side of the river of the water of life. So you see

that blood AND WATER IS THE VERY ESSENCE OF THE New Testament (which blessing, the New Covenant blessing, both Galatians and Hebrews describes as being the Holy Spirit in us), which is the Triune God dispensed into us. God was the Word. The Word became flesh. The Word become flesh was the rent veil on the cross both opening the way to God and releasing the Spirit to dispense all of this life to man and in so doing became the LAMB. The Lamb became the LIFE GIVING SPIRIT in His resurrection! The essence of this Spirit is the blood and water that issued forth from the side of the rent VEIL Himself! The negative aspect of death, which is an element of the Spirit, to kill the old, washes, purifies and actually terminates the old creation germs within us! The positive aspect of the Spirit, which is the living water refreshes, quenches our thirst, strengthens, revitalizes the new life and brings all the elements of the divine life and nature with Him to sanctify, transform us conform us to the image of the first born and eventually take this DNA of Christ all the way to glorifying us with a new body! This is the whole New Testament! Can you see that these two ministries have become just one in the Lord Jesus Christ? This is why John the Baptist said "He must increase but I must decrease" and later had go off the scene.

So you see it was not easy for Christ, the very DNA of God, in fact very GOD Himself to obtain a bride built up with His very life and nature. To obtain her He would have to love her very much because He would have to go to the cross. So, we see that Adam was a type or shadow of this reality.

When the woman (which means out of man) was brought to the man Adam said "this is now bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh"! Paul in Eph. 5 repeats these words again and in doing so refers to Christ and His Bride. So it must be that we are humanity of His new humanity and deity of His deity. This does not make us God in the Godhead as the infinite One Who alone should be worshiped and Who wields the ultimate control of the divine power. But this makes us partakers of He Himself in that we are now part of His very life and members of His Body. Though we are part of God Himself, it must be re-iterated that there is only One God and only to Him belongs all glory honor and praise for He alone is worthy and we are only worthy because we are given the privilege to be in Him! When Christ who is our life appears, then you also will appear with Him in glory. Colossians 3:4.

In Ephesians 5 you can also see these two (termination and germination) aspects of Christ's one ministry or anointing (or you can even call it painting or even a masterpiece). Ephesians 5:25 & 26 says: Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, (the blood) that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word. (the germinating Spirit). With this Christ builds His bride with the result of all this worked within us: gold, pearls and precious stones!





## Chapter 14 The Painting's Backdrop - more on the House of GodChapter 14

### The Painting's Backdrop

Whew! Can I tell the exciting story now? Unfortunately, you will not understand the 5 day sequence of events (the Painting) without the proper and actual background. It is at that point that the picture paints a thousand words. Here I would beg my reader: if you have made it this far, please bear with the last touches of the dull background (except for Ron Gattelle; he's not so boring of a guy!) which may be kind of boring for a while. But let me caution you. All of these facts are necessary to understanding how all these unbelievable pieces of this puzzle came together.

So now we come to Charleston, South Carolina. As I kissed my beautiful young wife and toddler daughter good bye and got ready for my cross-country flight I made her a promise. As I could get all the price of their flight and a place to stay together they would follow close on my heels. This was like the start of a new chapter of my life. But little did I know what added wonderful things God had for me. It is unfortunate that I did not mine ALL the riches laid at my feet by the greatest Giver of all.

As soon as the plane lifted off of the ground it was as though an awesome chapter were beginning in my life and broke down crying tears of joy as if I were actually before the very face of God. But there seemed also to be an element of awe, carefulness and the fear of God as if something very special and important were to be entrusted to me and handled with great care. When finally the landscape of South Carolina was in view I was almost flabbergasted at the place I saw. I never saw so many big trees and it seemed as if so many houses were separated by so much landscape and trees between them. To me it was a strange place.

The very same day after a taxi ride where I was even more impressed by all the green, trees and swamp land, I was brought up to the pier of my first real command after boot camp, The USS Holland AS-32. This ship is now de-commissioned after doing her last tour in Guam where my last ship (I hope!) the USS Frank Cable AS-40 (which is still in Guam at the time of this writing) relieved the Holland so it could journey to its last yard period before de-commissioning. Of course there was a sense of awe as I struggled up the brow of my first ship wearing my Cracker Jack dress blues and carrying my heavy Navy-issue sea bag on my bag. Up went my hand in a stiff salute to the Officer of the Deck as I came aboard a United States vessel as an actual member of the United States Naval service for the first time and said "Request permission to come aboard, sir!" Eventually I learned that there was no need to say "sir" like I had been doing in boot camp except to Commissioned Officers as Petty Officers and Chiefs are only enlisted and do not get addressed as "sir" or "ma'am." I was soon given a rack and shown around as to where to sleep and eat. After this I was taken onto a tour of the ship to hopefully get some bearings as to my surroundings. That

awesome first day on my first command, of course, I will never forget. The date was December the 5th, 1983.

In 1983, the USS Holland was located for the most part on pier Charlie located at what is still today as "The Weapons Station." There was also at that time a main base for the Navy where pier Delta and onward were located where there were many more ships. But this Station has been shut down and sold since about 1994 due to Government cut backs. Never mind my opinions on that. The Weapons Station consisted of about four miles of "out of base" but still government owned property and four more miles of "on base" property, altogether eight miles to pier Charlie. The strange thing about it was that it seemed to be mostly woods. There were many roads of course, but much of it was shrouded in mystery. Of course it was! It was a weapons station! As to what might have been there in those days: do not ask me because I will not tell you! I hardly know anyhow. At the end of those long eight miles were three piers: Alpha. Bravo and Charlie and of course the Holland was on Charlie and many times visiting submarines would be hooked up to it for it was a Sub-Tender. This is why it did not often go to sea as it was too busy taking care of these boats and repairing them 90% of the time. Right at the beginning of this eight mile trek there was the Navy community center with a commissary for food shopping, a Navy Exchange, Post Office, etc. and there were several blocks of Government housing for the Military. Years later I had the privilege of living in Government Quarters in that very same location when I reported to the Frank Cable before its trip to Guam. I was very impressed on my first day as I walked down the main deck of the Holland and looked down at the submarines below which were attached by a brow, many lines, hoses and cables of various kinds.

Soon after this I wanted to see Charleston, which I heard was beautiful and one of the oldest cities in the United States. There was a liberty bus system that went the hour long journey over there (the Navy Stations were in the North Charleston area and the Weapon's Station is still located at Goose Creek. Since I think it was a Friday when I reported, I went to Charleston on the 2nd day after my arrival. I was quite impressed! Downtown Charleston is as deep South as Southern gets. Many of the old buildings have survived even though there would be many more if it were not for certain historical earthquakes and city wide fires that have ravaged the city during one of longest histories of any city in existence in the United States today. They say the oldest "church" in America exists at the "The Four Corners of Law." It is at the intersection of Broad & Meeting Streets; where St. Michaels, City Hall, the County and Federal Courthouses (in which building a classic fancy Federal Post Office also resides) reside. It refers to city law, state law, federal law, and God's law.

Among the features of this city, which is such a taste of early America, is the famous Southern Charlestonian house. The "front" porch is the really the side porch. And where is the other door? I'm not sure if I remember right. But you have to realize this is old Charleston.

I was told as I walked through the downtown old shops and restaurants and later the neighborhoods with their classic southern three and four story houses that

most of these houses ranged in price from a half million to a million dollars! I was in awe at the beauty, color, and design of the architecture.

As I continued on walking the streets that night the Holy Spirit seemed to bring my heart to dwell on the great House of God and what a far more awesome building is His house. At this point a scripture came to me. It was surprising that it did but it was "Come over to Macedonia and help us." As this Word came to me I remembered a brother and friend of mine: Steve Bender. At this point I felt within me that he should help at the true building up of believers as the house of God. I wrote him a letter telling him so and believe it or not, the brother some months later moved to Charleston after visiting me. Then GOD visited him on my front porch one evening! Yes, the brother helped me raise up an assembly the best we knew how at that time in that city a couple years later. Many lessons were learned which perhaps I'll touch on later.

Immediately, of course, I sought for the fellowship I had known in LA & Dan Diego. How? I went to the phone book to look up the term "the church in Charleston" ..... Or find "the church in Goose Creek" ... or something (note: the previous is the 'way' the local "churches" put their meetings in the phone book if there was such a gathering in a city.) But there was no such assembly there anywhere. For the next 2 years I proceeded under the assumption there was no such gathering in the entire state of South Carolina (and that was considered the Bible belt? Ha!) I found out later that that was right. At least for that first or so year it was. After that a group of Christians was raised up in Columbia, up North. I found out about them a year or two after that. So, as a result I missed the fellowship I had known in the local church meetings. I went to various Pentecostal gatherings and other groups of Christians and found them to be not up to what I had known in the local church. In fact, maybe I was the only one person in the whole state who believed the way I did. I went to one holiness meeting which was used as a broadcast for a radio program. The preaching was strong and the moving of the Spirit was powerful and there was quite an anointing, much rejoicing and song. Everything seemed to be so 'uppity' there that you would think it strange, but I perceived them to be dead! Dead? Well, uem-hemm!! Now, bro. Kevin you don't really mean..." Oh yes I do! They were dead! There could not be an expression of Christ in their midst. It would have been impossible! As uppity and enthusiastic as they were there was very little of the life of God being experienced or expressed. At least there could be a little of this in today's Christianity. There was power there but no life! This is not unusual today. It is the norm for most Pentecostal churches, and I'm not saying that sometimes their power is not sometimes real. But the real growth in life should proceed power even as it even did in the life of the Lord Jesus Himself. (Whom we're supposed to follow, C'mon! wake up!) So what did I talk about with the believers I met here and there? About how we should be in oneness and how god's special blessing rests upon us when we are. Of course I would share how in the Bible there was only one "church" in one city, etc. It was amazing to me that it seemed that almost all of the believers I talked to in those days were totally blinded to what I was talking about and even these days (though there has been a marked change in receptivity to the



idea) it seems few have ever even heard of such a concept, much less having even an inkling of the slightest thought of attaching any importance to such a thing. It just seems it doesn't matter. But it does matter to God, so it should matter to us.

I wasn't about to give up very easily. I was hungry for the kind of fellowship I had known through my times with the local churches in California. So I went to the Chaplain onboard ship. He said "is there anyone onboard you've met that seems to meet with a kind of group that you have an interest in? Then he asked "is there a group out there that you are interested in meeting with?" The I told him "yes, it's called the Fire Escape." (to which I'll backtrack and talk about in the next chapter) Then he said that he knew someone named Richard, who had gone to the Fire Escape. I had met Richard briefly so I knew whom he referring to and replied, "yes, I have met him. Since I have met him I have wanted to get with him again and also have been planning to visit the Fire Escape again soon." Now here I must tell you and explain that this visit to the Chaplain took place AFTER the events in the next chapter as I had already visited the Fire Escape.

But after I left the Chaplain that day I never once ran into Richard again or even caught a glimpse of him onboard ship even though he worked on the same ship as I did until the God-ordained day for a very special get together with this precious brother. But I'll have to save that one for later. Richard was a blond haired, blue eyed, tall slim and seemingly gentle hearted (when you first met him) brother who had a very definite commitment to Christ that could really be seen plainly. It was the divine ordination of God that I would get to know him exactly the very day I did and I thank God for him.

At this point it is time to back track to other events that brought my attention to a Christian coffee house in North Charleston in those days called: The Fire Escape. The plot thickens.

## Ron Gatrelle and the Fire Escape

All of these events I'm writing about now took place in the first few weeks of my first tour in the Navy before the 5-day trek where the sovereign picture from another realm visited and intersected with my little world. That started on December the 30th, 1983 and ended on January the 3rd, 1984. The things I am referring to now as a necessary background to these events all happened mostly between Dec. 5th and Dec 30th.

I am a piano player. In a sense, piano used to be me. When I was in the organized church I was the piano player for all the choirs in the Valley Trinity Foursquare Church and could sit and play and sing literally for hours. After that I was in a Christian traveling rock band for awhile.

Well, considering the fact that I had one at my mom's house for many years all the time daily, I was missing being able to play. So one night I went to the chapel at the Community Center at the Naval housing community I mentioned that is still there eight miles away from pier Charlie and the Holland. I was hoping to find a piano there and sure enough, there was a young seaman sailor who was working for the Chaplain and had duty on the chapel premises that night. Being quite friendly, he let me into a Sunday school room that late afternoon where I continued on for hours playing the piano and singing to the Lord. Refreshing indeed! If you remember the Prologue I wrote at the beginning of this book, this was the night I was referring to that caused me to realize that in those days I expressed the very soul and deepest feelings through the piano keyboard. In my case I guess my hands were a very vitalizing part of the "real me" so to speak. Finally after about 3 hours I sat down to take a break. I got to talking with the RP (the guys who work for the chaplains are called RP for Religious Petty Officers) Of course you must understand this before I talked to the Chaplain on board ship. He showed me a copy of a ministry magazine from "Kingdom Ministries" I think it was. I've tried in these days of writing to find them still in existence and can't do it. There were some rather insightful articles by Ron Gatrelle. It was kind of like a newspaper. So I think I borrowed one. I got interested in Ron's articles because he seemed to see things that many other Christians I knew had never seen. Also he had some insight and revelation of the Word, but it seemed to me shallow with not much depth. At that point was born by the sovereign arrangement of God, for the purpose of making all these things fall into place, a desire to meet this brother.

It was after this journey to the chapel that I met Richard briefly and had that meeting with the Chaplain I have already mentioned. Shortly after that I somehow contacted some people from the Fire Escape and arranged to visit. I got a ride (, as I had no car in those days) from a brother named Pete that night. We shortly arrived at the Fire Escape coffeehouse. The bottom floor was a coffeehouse and the upper story had chairs set up in rows like most of the

organized church today. But I never saw that part of it that night because I was visiting during a informal Saturday night coffee house fellowship. You could buy Dr. Pepper there and there were some snacks.

Some of the guys were just sitting at a table talking. A couple other guys were engaged in a chess game. There was one brother up there in front on a stool with a guitar singing for everybody, but his volume was such that you could ignore him if you wanted to. What kind of upset me somewhat were the pictures and posters they had up of some of the "Christian" rock groups of that day. Some of these bands do lift up Christ but when they got painted faces like the worldly KISS rock band it just doesn't fit right with me. From the start I told Pete I wanted to meet Ron but for quite awhile I didn't know who he was and I got into talking with Pete. It was amazing! Finally someone heard what I had been talking about. What was I talking about those days? I referred to the scriptural ground of unity, the local ground of oneness, and the blessedness on that ground. I was so used to deaf ears on this point that I was shocked that Pete was hearing me! He seemed to agree. Of course to find someone who really sees it is not so easy. But then I began to share with him concerning spiritual things and there was some good though not excellent fellowship. Inwardly, I began thanking God. After this another brother got interested in our conversation and joined our table. Soon Pete wanted to talk to someone else and left the table. The new brother who joined the table had sort of longish but not too long hair and wore a full beard but it was well groomed and not too long. He seemed to agree with the concept somewhat of one assembly for one locality but had some drawbacks. He thought it quite interesting to hear some of the things I was saying. Deep within me though, even though this conversation seemed to be going very well and in my favor there was **HUGE DISTURBANCE! I WAS SO INWARDLY BOTHERED BY THE Holy Spirit** that it was totally amazing!

After awhile during the conversation on spiritual things I mentioned Witness Lee and to my surprise this brother actually knew of whom I was talking about. But he expressed that he did not agree with Witness Lee and had a problem about him. I was very disturbed by the Spirit's turbulence within warning me I should turn away and not visit very often. He revealed something was very wrong but did not specifically tell me at the time. (I found out years later!) But then why had I been led to visit here in the first place? And what about Pete and how open he was? Well after talking with this brother for about an hour or so (seemingly the conversation was going quite well even though the inner witness of the Spirit was saying the opposite!!!!) I mentioned the fact I had come there to meet Ron Gatrelle. At this point this brother said, "I am Ron Gatrelle!" I had been talking with him all that time and didn't know it. There was something I had noticed from the beginning though and that was the fact that there was an air of self-superiority about him. You know that intimidating spirit you feel around some pastors because of this evil, demonic, Satanic (C'mon! Call a spade a spade!) system of thought that puts one Christian above another when Jesus said "you are all brethren and One is your Teacher" He meant of course that there is



only one Master. Only one Father and only one Lord. It was interesting because even though he had this condescending outlook on others, he was hearing some very interesting things from me he had never heard of before and since he was at least teachable he would listen and learn ... and feed back. But deep within I know now that also part of it was the desire to learn about maybe some possible heresy within me that he might refute it because he was into refuting heresy and error to "protect the flock" (he was totally unqualified for that one!). Anyway, even though the Spirit kept turning and churning within me in a foreboding way warning me of this brother, our conversation continued till 3:00 o'clock in the morning! And Ron was supposed to preach the next morning (he had to! Martin Luther ordered it to be so!).

At this parting point Ron out of the heart of the love that was in his capacity (I think it was the kind Peter had for Jesus in Matt 16) invited me to come back and hear him preach at his church service the next morning. But due to the Spirit's warning within, I told him "I don't think so, I don't know when, if ever, I'll be back" or something to that effect. At this he said something by way of some kind of Proverb that sounded totally weird to me. But as far as I was concerned the spirit had warned me to keep my distance and keep my distance I would.

They say that the next morning (that same morning) after Ron preached and there was an altar call that Ron went to that so-called "altar" got on his knees and prayed for me, praying that I would come back. He prayed that he would have another opportunity to meet me and speak to me once again, praying I would be in the truth, etc. But I never did show my face there again for a long time even though I did plan to one time. You will see the unbelievable sovereign arrangement in all these things as this story proceeds. It is such a painting of such wealth untold that if you truly see you will have to catch your breath! It is quite interesting to me now that I never met up with Richard or so much as saw him except that first brief meeting before these things ..... that is until the time appointed. Amazing!

So what is the meaning of all this? I will give you a small window now, and a much bigger one further on. There was a poisoning going on in Ron Gattelle and the Holy Spirit knew what was going on. But it was not so extensive as it was after a space of time had passed. By design, I didn't find out till years later. It was even by God's design I found that out so you could know the truth!

## Chapter 16 Important Facts and Circumstances - according to His purpose.

This is probably the most boring chapter of this whole book but you find if you will have patience that the facts contained herein, though they may not seem very important as you read them here, bear solemn weight upon these events and are a most important background for this revelation of things in the eternals and in the very heart of the Lord. Truly it was well said in Romans: "all things work together for good to those who love God and are the called according to His Purpose."

My first week onboard the USS Holland was spent mostly checking in and then working directly for the Master Chief of the Command, who is the #1 enlisted man aboard any command. All I remember is that we were worked with the ships seal stamping a bunch of forms, etc. After this the command wasted no time in sending me to work at the mess decks. The term "mess cranking" is a term very familiar to most anyone in the Navy. It's comparable to KP or Kitchen Patrol in the Army, etc. I actually went twice. The first time I went for 120 days. The second time it was 90 days. On most ships only the younger and low ranking sailors get this "privilege." It is pay grades E-1 through E-3 on most commands unless they are so small they take E-4 also. But usually if you make Petty Officer third class which is E-4 they can't make you go mess cranking again. Eventually I had to make E-4, of course!

My first mess-cranking tour was in the ship's enlisted Galley. That is the place where meals were made for the enlisted sailors and they say it was a little better than working in the Officer's mess area. But serving tables is not as bad as being inside the Galley. It was like being inside a sweaty kitchen all day. The worst part of it all was cleaning the grills. They were being cooked upon constantly. So were the kettles and other fixtures of the Galley in constant use for three meals a day. The worst was they wanted you there bright and early at 0400 or 0500 in the morning to prepare for breakfast.

There would be almost a "white glove" inspection every night about 1900 or 7:00 o'clock in the evening if we called and said we were ready by that time. Any way that was the goal to get out of there by that time but it didn't always work out that way.

Now this is important, very important to this story. The mess decks had two teams or what the Navy calls sections to take care of everything that had to do with food service AND to give us time off. At least there was one good thing while mess cranking and that was that you didn't have to stay onboard ship 24 hours and not go home every 5th or 6th day while mess cranking. You got to go home every night. Even if it was 7:00 or 8:00 at night which in our language would be 1900 or 2000. However, so you wouldn't have to stay that late EVERY night you were either on the Port duty or Starboard duty. I think I was in the Port duty section. During the week you would stay till after the evening meal every other day. On the day between you would stay till after cleanup after lunch and then get to go home! That was cool! It would be between 1430 (2:30) and 1600. You would go home at 1400 if you were fortunate. On the week where

Port had to work Monday, Wednesday and Friday till 1900 they would be the only ones there on Saturday and Sunday and work the same hours whereas Starboard would get the weekend off. But on the week where you worked Mon, Wed, and Fri till after lunch cleanup you had the weekend off.

Well, on Christmas day, 1983, not only was my wife and daughter not there with me yet but I was working all day. They probably gave us an hour off to sit down cause it was Christmas but that was about all the "merry" I got!

Now I have to change the subject a little. There was a certain brother affiliated with the Lutheran denomination that helped (though he would not accept my viewpoint on the New Testament assembly life at all I don't think) me out. I had no car in those days so to go out apartment hunting even I needed some transportation help from a friend. Fortunately I found an apartment complex only a few blocks beyond the big traffic light intersection where the Government property became civilian property (or city property) once again. Of course even though they were long blocks, I had to get my wife, daughter and I something as close to where the ship was that I could get because we had no car for awhile after that.

The paperwork, the rent, the first and last down payment, and the credit check all seemed to go through so that I was due to pick up my keys and get into our place on the exact day that my off weekend was to start! If you read this whole story and come back to this fact later I think you'll have to agree there was not a single event that was not worked out by the Lord to the tee in exact precise detail. Only me, only these exact circumstances, only this life with these concepts that I had in that exact year could have been the setting for this experience! It could never be experienced before or after by anyone who had ever lived by any chance! There are just too many details! I mean it is all so amazing! At this very moment as I write I am more amazed by it than ever before in my life! As I look at these things again from different angles I am more amazed than I was the first time and each time even more amazed and only God could do something of this kind of nature for His glory. To me this proves beyond a shadow of a doubt that He was in it.

The apartment I got was in an apartment complex called "Devonshire Apartments." Of course I am thankful for the help from the brother who helped me get over to the place to get it. Blessed be the name of the Lord forever for all that He provides for His own. Like they say, "He may not come when you want Him, but He's always right on time!" Right, Lazarus? Praise the Lord!



## Chapter 17

Should a Follower of Jesus be the Spit-ee' or the Spit-er? .... more hidden works of darkness

OK. Are you ready to get into the time tunnel again? Sorry to do this to you again but there are many facts making up this background. Now we must jump eight months to future after the events of the five-day sequence of events. We're jumping around all over the place. Too bad we don't really have time travel (that is in our flesh).

It was after the events of the five-day sequence that Richard, his wife and couple of others of those of us who were meeting together eight months later decided to go visit the Fire Escape and Ron Gattelle. (Go ahead and sue me quick Ron, I don't have much of anything right now!) Ron was considered the "pastor" there by those who met there and some also called him a prophet. Whether he was a prophet or not I do not know. I do believe there is such a thing as prophets today, but frankly I have to tell you that whether Ron was one or not, I don't know and to be honest with you, I don't care! Now you remember what I said about me not going back there since that one night. Well this was the time I went back! And I went in with some of the sheep that this "sheep stealer" that I am took away from Ron. I'm such a bad man!

Ron, of course, being such a "man of God" that he was and a prophet and whatever else it was they called him, had had a premonition that I was going to be coming to his place that night from the supernatural world! He knew I was coming! From what I heard later he also got instructions from the same source as to what to do when I got there.

We arrived at the Fire Escape (I think it was a Friday night) after their meeting had started and went upstairs where people were sitting in neat rows all looking straightforward of course. At who? Ron, of course, was standing there with a microphone in his hand pacing back and forth taking his time with his preaching subject. Our wives decided to stay outside parked across the street. Only Richard and a brother named Scott went in with me.

As soon as we got in we proceeded to take our seats but I never actually got to sit down in that cold chair. I was halfway into when I had to stand back up because when Ron saw me his whole body straightened up and he said, "Kevin (here he used my last name also which I do not use on my site to have email contact only). Would you please leave?!?" As I stood back upright I said "Wha...wha...a..at brother?" To that he curtly replied, "Ushers, see him out the door!" Then as they came up to me to escort me out, I said as I was starting to go out with them "Brother, what's the problem???" Then he said "There goes Judas Iscariot, there goes the devil!" as I was being led out. Here I called him brother, but he called me Judas Iscariot and a devil!

Poor brother Scott! He was just a young Christian and had never seen such mean things among Christians. (I hate to say this, but these kinds of things among Christians are quite common and that's reality. If anyone is NOT going to cut corners and instead tell you the TRUTH its gonna be me!) (See, I told you the stuff about Ron was not gonna be boring! If you think this is mere gossip, read the rest of the story first. I hold no bitterness of any kind toward this brother. He apologized to me years ago for this and I forgave him. But even as Paul wrote of the public incident between Peter and himself to the Galatians and it became public knowledge for the preservation of the truth of the gospel even so I do in this book to help certain other men of God restore truths that have been lost for literally centuries.) At this point poor Scott got up and left when I got up and left because with in himself he said, "if they're gonna do that to my brother Kevin, I am not going to stay around for this kind of thing." But brother Richard stayed inside to see what would happen next and to take notes about whatever else Ron was going to say. Hmmm .... Could Richard with stand the poison? Was he mature enough in courts of the Lord's very heart? I still don't know what was said the rest of that evening. But Richard later proved that he was going to go back to today's formal ritualistic Christianity later on. In a sense it's a good thing brother Richard stayed in there because I would have stayed even if he hadn't! there I was across the street pacing back and forth on the sidewalk while my wife and Richard's wife sat in the truck. Why was I going to stay there? Oh! That's simple! Because of the words of the Lord Jesus Christ when He said "if your brother has ought in his heart against you, go to him!" So since I did not know what it was Ron had against me (I actually never really knew what it was till two years after that! CAN YOU BELIEVE IT!), I was going to stay and find out. The general consensus was that we were waiting for Richard but I changed it to I'm waiting for Ron. When Scott asked me why I was going to stay till Ron came out I said "He kicked me off of his premises because he has the right to do so governmentally but this is the public sidewalk and he cannot kick me off of here! Then I quoted him that scripture concerning the words of Christ I just mentioned. Then I said "the Lord said if the brother has ought against you go to him ... so I'm going to go to him, even if I have to wait all night till he comes out ...of that coffee house he ran for God, or whatever you know, and I'm going to find out what's going on in his head.

After about a an hour and a half wait, some people started trickling out of the building so I crossed the street and stood there right in front out on the sidewalk. Eventually one of the so-called "elders" (if you want to know the real truth about Biblical eldership, the 20th century produced the best book about "Eldership" ever written. I highly recommend it. What's the title? "Rethinking Elders" It's also by Gene Edwards) came out whose name was also Richard (he is also mentioned in later parts of my story). Being a so-called "elder" he probably thought he had the right to speak to me as rudely as he did and told me curtly: "A man of God told you to leave. What are you still doing here?" He continued this kind of talk! "A prophet of God, the authority of God told you leave!" Here they are calling him "the authority of God" now , you know! To that I replied, "Whether he is a prophet or authority of God or not, I do not know. And even if he does have authority ("cough!! Ahem!! I don't even believe in

authority over one another anymore! Paul had authority to discipline concerning the Corinthians in II Cor. But nowhere does it say brother has authority OVER other brothers except maybe parents to children and masters to slaves but that is NOT in spiritual things! But here they were calling this man the authority of God! Was his authority to hurt other children of God without cause? If you're going to discipline or you think you even can at least give me a reason!) "Whether he is a prophet or authority of God or not, I do not know. And even if he does have authority or if he doesn't have the authority of a prophet, the Bible has greater authority and the Bible says "if your brother has ought against you, GO TO HIM. So when he comes out here I'm going to go to him." Now it was only about one to three minutes after I said these things to Richard that Ron came out so I do not know if anyone reported my words to Ron or not. To this very day I still do not know, but it is obvious someone told him I was out there because of the way he came out. It was as if a storm in the form of a whirlwind came out of the door of that place! Let's put it this way. I didn't have to move very far in order to go to him. He did most of that for me! He came out storming, rushing at me headlong, walking as swiftly as a man can walk (Hey! With that hair and his beard he even looked, not just acted, like some kind of a mad prophet or something) and as he strode towards me with all his total boldness, no fear and perfect confidence in his righteousness he shouted the words: "I THOUGHT I TOLD YOU TO LEEEAVE!!!! with all his "authority" and everything, you know! Then he rushed up to me and spit in my face!!!! Now, wait a minute! I thought the Christians were supposed to be followers of Jesus. I thought Christians were supposed to be the spit-tee's, not the spit-ters. Can you see that dreadful day in the garden of Gethsemane when the soldiers spit Jesus in the face. Did He spit back at them? Is that the Christian thing to do? Did He collect a big 'ol luggie and spit back at them and say "here's one for you!" It sounds funny, but can't you see that the very thought is ridiculous? Then he angrily said "what're you still doing here!"

At this point I knew that the scripture had said that a soft answer turns away wrath so I lowered my voice and said "Brother, I'm here because I'd like to know why you did this and because the scripture says "If your brother has ought against you, go to him." Well, his voice lowered and came down so the wrath thing worked but he still had given lodging to a deceiving spirit and it was still operating. He went on to say something like this: "I know you must be a seeker of god and you must have been quite sincere at one time but something of the enemy has happened to you and you've become twisted and your conscience seared with a hot iron and you're beyond help for years now. " (It's amazing how little he knew about me, but the way it came out and the spirit with which it came got me upset and I almost kind of started to believe him just a little!) The he said "I believe your are in some kind of cult or something (so maybe he was trying to protect 'his flock' or something?). I know God said "come now and let us reason together, but I'm not going to reason with you, you devil!!! There is a wall between us" ... and he made a hand motion up and down between us with the back of his palm toward me and shouted again: "you see this wall? Between us there is nothing there... and do you see this wall. Between us there is nothing



but DIVISION" Then he really shouted: DIVISION and BITTERNESS!!!! At this point I knew I had tried to obey the Lord and as far as I knew to do but it was OK to turn around and give up.

Do you see that the enemy that works in the children of disobedience (whether they know they are disobedient or not) works even in Christians when they are not right on with the Word whether they realize it or not? Good night it could even happen to Peter a man who walked with Jesus day and night and heard His Word hour by hour! This was just the divisions of Satan. Through this ugly glass do you see how today's Christians are? They are divided in all kind of divisions and sects against each other. It's because they are walking according to their own concept, opinion and according to the thought of man, not according to the thought of God. This is why Peter was rebuked and Jesus actually called him SATAN! Well .... Just cause I was called Satan doesn't mean that I was Satan ...at that time when I was called Satan by a mere man just cause he said so. You need to read on further and get the facts. Of course there have been many other times for me .... But now is not the time to go there! Even Jesus was called Satan and lord of the flies also but was it ever true in His case? But we need to stand for the unity where the gates of hell cannot overcome! There can be talk of the oneness of believers actually built together with the glory and gold of God but how can you have oneness till you first have unity? The stones must be at the same location together before they can cemented together.

Of course, before all this had taken place I did not know that there was that much negative going on in this man. But if it weren't then the things that happened to me during the five-day trek would not have taken place.

At this point I will unravel this part of the mystery for you as best I can. It was till two years later I found out from another brother who attended the F.E. that Ron had the book "The God -Men" in his library, the book that de-famed brother Lee, and he had had it there since I first knew him. That explained everything to me. At this point I would refer you back to chapter 6 again as to what I wrote about that book. To make a long story short, it is full of poison. If someone reads it who doesn't know all the facts from both sides, how could you possibly blame the guy for not thinking the local church was a cult? After I heard this I did not blame Ron at all. That book had probably already poisoned him somewhat the first time he met me. That explains why I felt uncomfortable the first time I talked to him according to the inner witness of the Spirit.

Then there was a report made a few weeks later by another brother (the "elder" Richard ) who had talked at length with me. That probably became a lengthy inaccurate conversation and Ron probably went back to read the God-Men some more after which he became an avenue of Satan in that city, though he may have been unaware of it.

Even though I did not blame him, still it was wrong what he did and the Holy Spirit sure did blame and convict. It is reported that he did not get peace or sleep until he confessed his sin to God later. After that he eventually also apologized to his congregation and admitted his behavior to be wrong. But he did not personally apologize to me till six months later and when he did you could tell that his attitude was still against what I stood for. Actually I do not

think he ever really knew what I stood for.

From this you should learn not to just receive what you read or hear at face value. You should dig in and investigate lest you receive the very lies of hell and in receiving them become an avenue of Satan by receiving the enemy himself. Good night man! If Peter could become an avenue of Satan in the very presence of Jesus Himself, why can't Ron? Why could it not happen to me or you? Of course, my dear dear brother Ron did not know he was the avenue of Satan, nor did he know why. Now I'm not into this mentality today which says we shouldn't listen to anything else except what your "great pastor" says so close your ears to the radio etc. THAT is WHY we're so deceived these days. The real truth is you need to TEST all things by the Word and find out the real facts and listen to both sides of the story! We are in a day when most of us can read in America. We shouldn't close our ears. Rather we should open them even more and know the truth (or reality) and the truth will make us free. Just make sure that the story which is in the scriptures is your final yardstick of truth.



## Chapter 18

The Five-Day Trek: Here We Go!!! More light on stones built together in assembly.

December the 30th, 1983

It was the weekend I was looking forward to. I got off about 2:00 O'clock, Friday and was in high spirits as this was the time I would get the keys to my new apartment, call my wife and fly them over to Charleston where our new life would begin. It was a bleak, overcast day out with gray skies. Chilly, of course, with a very light drizzle hardly noticeable, but I was happy to be at liberty and get a place to sleep off the ship. I couldn't wait to get to the Exchange, buy some blankets, pillows, food and etc. to fix up my apartment. Little did I know whom I was about to meet. But first I went to call my wife and let her know I was getting the place together and they could go ahead and fly over across the country to meet me. I desired to be with her SSSSSOOoooo bad and then my life would be complete. But being as a calling card was a rarer concept then than it is now, I went to a pay phone to call her collect. This may have been part of the reason I didn't call her as often as I would have liked due to the fact that I felt embarrassed that I called collect.

Now this is important so remember what I'm about to write here as being one of the most important facts in this whole story! So I told her that all things were ready for her to fly out, but she said "I can't come yet.... Call me back Tuesday." Now here is the important part and without this fact none of the things of this picture that happened that weekend could have happened. God allowed me to be dumb! Or you could use the word stupid or foolish or whatever word you choose to use but I really thought in my "narrow brain" at that time that I wasn't supposed to call her back until Tuesday so I didn't! But 2 days later things had changed for her and she was free from the apparent situations and problems she had to take care of and was waiting for my call as it was New Year's day!! And here I didn't even call her on New Year's day, Sunday to wish her Happy New Year! That's dumb. I found out later that she was waiting for my call and was ready on Sunday to fly over but had no way of calling a guy on a ship during an off weekend who just got a place out in town of course! But as this story goes on you'll see it was a good thing that I didn't. In fact after what was supposed to happen happened I thanked God I hadn't called her. When I conveyed all these facts to her about three weeks later there were tears in her eyes. Now if you think about my work schedule and put all the facts together you'll see what I mean. If things had not happened the way it did this whole thing could not have happened the way it did.

Richard!



Even though I was a little bit let down by the situation I was still in quite an up mood after this. I think it was because I was glad to have the time off and place of my own off the ship where I could spend time with God during the weekend. So my plan was still to do the same things as I was going to do anyway. Of course I didn't have a car to do all this shopping with and it seems to me now that I was so happy that the difficulty of it all was not even considered. Besides it turned out that it didn't wind up mattering after all as the Lord was about to bless me.

I walked from the pay phone to the end of the parking lot at pier Charlie where the driveway turns out into the road to do what I usually did in those days. Hitch hike! So I stuck out my thumb and by the Lord's mercy I did not have to wait very long at all. A big brown Ford truck pulled over to pick me up. In I got and who should it be but Richard! He recognized me from our having met once and said "Hey, how ya doing?" I said, "Brother, I've been wanting to talk to you." Then I told him about what had transpired with me and how I had recently spoken with the Chaplain about him, etc. And here finally I met someone who was completely open to my fellowship concerning the Recovery of the assembly life. He actually heard me out on the concept of the proper unity, etc. He was receptive to the point that the oneness, which I had felt in Los Angeles because of those in agreement on the proper ground of unity, was there again! I felt it again for the first time since I had been in San Diego. This brother began to agree with me. That oneness was there! That which you cannot gain in ANY Pentecostal church or Methodist church or Lutheran church. You can't find it anywhere else except THERE! There on the ground of unity. As we were going he told me he would help me out by taking me to the Commissary food store to stock up my Refrigerator for my family and also to get some pillows and blankets to put on the floor so we could sleep and also various other things we would need to start up a household. I had no furniture so things were rough to start out with.

At that point Richard asked me where I had my new place at. When I told him I got a place at Devonshire Apartments he was surprised because that's where he lived! Then he said that after taking me to the store to pick up a few things and helping me out he wanted me to stick with him and fellowship with him and go back to the ship with him as he had to swing back by there and pick up his wife. I said "Your wife!?"

You see, husbands and wives are not supposed to be together in the Navy at the same command, but in this case they were both Holland sailors and met each other there and tied the knot and the Navy usually re-assigns one of the two to another shore duty or neutral duty command some where else depending upon the needs of the Navy. At this point the Navy had not yet had the time to process the paperwork proving that they were even married yet so it was quite some time before they re-assigned Richard to another ship.

So we went to the Commissary and Exchange and got the stuff into my apartment. It is a good thing he was there to help because the light drizzling rain became somewhat heavier and the walk is a little too long to get that stuff to my

place. The Devonshire apartments were configured as several different buildings, each with about 8 to 12 apartments in each building. When I brought my pillows and blankets and food and various other things to my place that was all there was because we had no furniture as of yet. I had to lay the bedding things on the floor, which was covered with a dull yellow carpet. But Richard's apartment was not much different as they had recently moved in also and also were a young recently married couple. Their apartment was also pretty bare with only an occasional beanbag and was about the same except theirs was a brown carpet. Any way, as far as the location of theirs to ours it was about 4 stone throws away or a 4 to 5 minute walk.

Ny!

After this we went back to pick up Richard's wife. When I saw her I remembered that I had seen her onboard ship before but would have never guessed who she might be. Her name was Ny, a very precious sister in Christ. After this they took me out that night and we had a very good time of fellowship. I shared with them many of the things I shared with you in this book and they could hear what I was saying with their heart and their experiences because they had both passed through an odd set of circumstances. But they did not understand the teaching or the Biblical terms of the things they knew in their hearts in the way I explained to both their heart and their head so there was some questions brought up as a result.

Three Stones Built Together

After this they said let's get together tomorrow again and hang out and fellowship. I said this is good, OK. So we did.

December the 31st, 1983

The next day I began realizing what a coincidence it was for God to have us in the same apartment complex and for the fact that we agreed on the same things about the oneness and the blessing on the ground thereof. The reason for this was that they had had some previous experience without planning it They had been at a place with the ship called Diego Garcia, an island in the middle of nowhere where many Naval operations are conducted. There is not much "institutional church" in an official way there so somehow there was a get together of Christians from off of the ship in a camp meeting type form and they slept in tents. One time they sat around in a big circle in the midst of their tents and

somehow agreed that they were members of one another and to drop their differences and ... THE HEAVENS WERE OPENED!!!! I am convinced it must have been true for Richard and Ny are not the only ones who told me. There were others since then that said there was such a presence of God there that night and it could only be remembered as "special." This can be easily explained. Because they chose to drop division and be in unity as all those who believed in one locality and that locality was an island on the Pacific called Diego Garcia. It did not end with that one night from what I heard but the sweet fellowship went on. (By the way that island is where the both of them met and tied the knot.) They said they would meet at unique times in the passageways of the ship and at unique moments God would meet their unique needs. Also another sign of the true unity was present: God's speaking was there. There seems to be no end to the Lord's communicating to His children where this unity exists. I have seen it over and over and its not weird visions and supernatural out of body experiences as much as revealing His word day by day in a very vital way. The windows of heaven had opened on that island. Why? It was because these Christians were meeting on the proper ground of oneness without even knowing it. So this was why in their heart and spirit they knew what I was talking about, but in their head they had never heard it the way they heard it that day because I was talking scriptures they never knew before and from an angle they had never considered from before. When I explained the Word to them how they could experience the abundant life, not just the Christian life, BUT the BODY life. The life of Jesus Christ is in His Body just as your life is in your body and He LIVES A BODY LIFE!! The eternal life is the life of God and is best lived and flourishes in a Body. My life is in this body writing this book right now. It's not somewhere else out on the porch while the real me or just the shell of the real me is in here doing this. Where am I? I am in my body. If you take my body and cut it into different pieces, which piece will my life be in? Answer is it won't be in any of them. Those pieces will just be the pieces of a dead corpse. AND YOU THOUGHT YOU COULD LIVE THE CHRISTIAN LIFE WITHOUT THE BODY OF CHRIST! HOW? The eternal life is in the Body of Christ! So we've got to avoid division at all cost. A big point of this book is that we must avoid division at all costs.

We had such good fellowship because they began to agree with me that there was the "church at Thyatira" (KJV of course), the "church in Smyrna" and etc. In other words there can only be one assembly in one locality. And as they were seeing this is so and were agreeing with me there was the flow there! I could feel the flow that only happens in the real Body relationship once again! At one point during that day the brother and I were in his truck going somewhere and were melted into tears. As we were we talked later and found we were both thinking on the same thing concerning the relationship of the Father to us as sons.

After this this precious couple took me to the mall and we ate out and again we



got into fellowship some more. And since it was New Year's Eve, we stayed up quite late. Finally as I was about to walk over to my place and turn in for the night after such a blessed day, they told me: "brother, why don't you come with us tomorrow morning and we'll go to the Fire Escape?" So I took their suggestion as the plan for the next day and headed out the door. As it turned out though, I never did make it to the fire Escape next morning, as it was not ordained of God for me to do so at that time. You will see why in the proceeding chapters.



## Chapter 19

Oh oh! The Gates Were Unlocked! Disunity proceeding a Satanic attack -

January the 1st, 1984

By the Divine wisdom and pre-arrangement of the Most Sovereign Almighty I was knocked out like a dead log on New Year's Day, 1984. It seemed like just as Adam went through a deep sleep, so did I. I mean this was a deep sleep. It was NOT God's time or will for me to go to the Fire Escape that morning or again, none of the things of this picture would have ever really all fit together so you could have it today. It's uncanny but if you look at this sequence of events very closely from start to finish you can see that the whole thing was engineered by the heart of God. Seemingly there was not one piece of the puzzle out of place when all was said and done. This series of co-incidences just cannot be explained away if you really and seriously look at this whole thing with an unbiased, prayerful and open mind.

Suddenly I woke up at noon! When I awoke all that I had been feeling the past couple of days was long gone! My feelings had completely changed! I felt completely alone. I realized that I was supposed to get up and go with Richard and Ny to the Fire Escape but then realized I was probably too late for that. Getting up and wondering how in the world I could've been in such a dead sleep for so long I prepared to go over to their pad to see them. I felt like I was alone again and deep in my spirit there was a "oh no! I missed them." Also there was a feeling that something was wrong but it was so remote.

So I went over to their place but they weren't there. I thought "Oh no, I missed them!" Here it was, it was New Year's Day. I had no TV, no radio, no Baptist Church, no one to talk to and as I walked back to my place I felt troubled in my spirit because I was all alone (it's not good for man to be alone, remember?) and missed their fellowship. Plus that I felt that something had happened, I actually knew deep within that they had heard something negative from Ron Gattelle and something was amiss but I did not even begin to dream what that it could be true. However, those deep inner registrations of the Holy Spirit in your spirit are usually pretty right on and you would do well to pay attention to what God communicates deep deep within. Of course you have to balance this inward feeling with the scriptures. But I felt that somehow they weren't in agreement with me any more and that the oneness had been broken.

Do you see? How can the stones be built together unless they are together? This can't just be a mental assent or a spiritual thing, it has to be practical. God wants us together. He wants our bodies together meeting together! Nothing else cuts the cake! This is so we can talk together and communicate the measure of each one part as Paul put it in Eph. 4. Hallelujah!

Anyhow, I felt that something was wrong and that I was all alone again but

little did I know what awaited me as a result. About once every hour I went over there again but they were not there. As a result I was left wondering what happened but instead of wondering too much I got into the Word. This time I turned to Rev. 22:17: "17 The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!"(") I was quite comforted by these Words and realized this must be the marital oneness and it existed no matter what and that they were so mingled, that is the Last Adam having become the life-giving Spirit and the bride that the two of them speak as ONE because they two have become ONE! This is so wonderful we can hardly conceive of it! And with these words the Spirit of the Lord gave me peace even though the loneliness continued. What added to my loneliness also was that I kept thinking about my wife. I just felt so lonely and right now I see something new I've never seen before in thinking about all these things. Do you think that maybe Adam was even still lonely after his deep sleep? From the time Jehovah built Eve from his side and Adam awoke, there still needed to be some time for Eve to walk alone with God. As that conversation was taking place there must have been this searching for her still going on in Adam till the most wonderful and ecstatic moment they both saw each other! Is it not true that the fall has made this loneliness and searching an even deeper lesson to mankind? Is it not ordained of God for every young person to go through a time of longing and searching and aloneness for quite some time, dealing with their desires for a mate and wondering who it will be? Is not this picture of the longing and loving heart of God written upon the very face of humanity in the way we are made? Is not this lesson placed before us day after day, generation after generation to reveal the longing heart of our Husband Christ? How can we take this away from Him causing Him to be alone by our divisiveness? **HOW CAN WE DO SUCH A THING TO CHRIST?!!??** Are we dense? We most certainly are! C'mon now! **IT'S TIME TO WAKE UP!!!!!!!**

When I woke up I felt these things but I was not as sensitive to what it was till later on after some more things developed. Little did I know that all of hell was rallied against me. Little did I know that almost all the demons and evil angels in South Carolina were rallied at that point against me. I kept on going over to their place over and over during the day. The gray day became darker and darker just as the skies became darker and darker but the Word from Revelation had given me peace so I was not that much upset. Neither was I cognizant of what was about to happen.

#### The Gates Are Open: The Black Clouds Come Rolling In

The sky was literally black with black clouds by 5:00 O'clock as I went over again. This time I saw that big brown truck parked in front of their building and welcomed the indication of these dear relatives of the family of God being there.

It's not that Richard was unfriendly to me. He was as friendly as before in a sense. He was as unwary of the realities I am about to explain as I was, probably even more so as I soon picked up on it but he didn't quite see it all the way through as the tracks of his life and deeds proved out through the years



following. I knock on their door and they invited me in. Then Richard said "let's play a game of chess." I love chess And have been a avid player for years (when I have the time!) so I readily agreed. So we pulled up a seat on the brown rug! After awhile he started to share with me and said some seemingly harmless words (they probably were harmless words in themselves) as he shared. He said: "Brother, I know what we were talking about yesterday, how there is life in the local church and everything, but we heard a message this morning and in this message it was brought to our attention that all who believe have life as it says in John 3:16 that whosoever believeth on him HATH everlasting life." And as soon as he said the word "but" I felt something hit me. It was like a negative vibration, like a depression drawing my emotions downward all of a sudden. It was like a sorrow stole over me. It contained in it a strong depressing feeling of being personally rejected. It was as if the brother turned on me or something and slapped me on the cheek and betrayed me (that should have proved to me immediately the hand of the enemy's attack, but the deception went on). It felt like my friends had turned on me and they had become my enemies. THEN hordes of darkness rolled in and all hell broke loose!!! My emotional insides were being ripped apart to shreds as he went on. He said some more seemingly harmless words and again they probably are harmless words and valid questions of a young believer in Christ but something was behind them he had no idea of! He went on quoting John 3:16 and said "all the Christians got life from believing brother. You don't have to be in the local church to have life." Of course Jesus said you could have life and have it more abundantly but before I had time to explain all hell broke loose and literally thousands of demons were UPON me. Now probably if I was more well founded in the truth I might have been able to withstand this attack and open my mouth and say something to this but even I at that time was not so well founded in truth that I knew exactly what to say concerning "life more abundantly" being the Body life flowing through the many members with the many functions the many graces and the unsearchable riches of the Lord Jesus Christ! Anyway, as the brother spoke there were such bad vibrations in that room that even he could feel them but it was nothing compared to what I was feeling. Literally thousands of thoughts were going through my mind!! There was doubt, fear, rejection, attack of my concepts and such loneliness. I felt such rejection that it opened seeming caverns of sorrow and deep despair within just as if I was a lost child without a human comforter in the entire world. Again, I was probably open to this attack because I was not so well founded in my faith or the truth concerning the things which I had been proclaiming (without knowing what kind of warfare was even involved with proclaiming such things). I'm going to tell you right now: you may not think this is important but you need to read Further Talks on the Church Life by Watchman Nee and other books about the ground of locality because if Satan can shake you on this he is going to shake you on this **BECAUSE IT DOES SOMETHING TO HIS KINGDOM AND HE KNOWS IT !!!!!!!** This is important whether you realize it or not and you are **NOT** prepared to do very well in battle without it! If he can shake you on this point and downplay it he will do it because if a people meet together outside of the

organized church totally according to the way the early ecclesia met with all the spiritual ingredients that the early ecclesia had INCLUDING God ordained and sent ecclesia planters, Satan is going to be routed and he knows it!!! You can't be halfway on this! Either this is all the way wrong or its right! The DEVIL SURE IS NERVOUS ABOUT IT!!!!!! He's biting his finger nails right now because I'm writing this. Two days ago my car got sick and my clutch went bad so I need a new one and he threatened me and said "give up writing this." "It's not the will of God" NONSENSE!!! MANY ARE THE AFFLICTIONS OF THE RIGHTEOUS BUT THE Lord delivers him out of them ALL!!!!!! Three days ago my father just passed away. Now I have to go to California and take care of all kinds of situations concerning his untimely death. This came as a surprise to us he seemed like he was in such good health. The devil doesn't want me to keep writing this book!

This story may be hard for you to believe that there was this much going on against the seemingly little stuff I was talking about in those days but this story is absolutely true. Now this is hard for me to describe because I'm still talking about what happened with in a couple of minutes and I'm not even done yet there is so much packed into that short period of time so it is very difficult to convey the inward agony I was going through but the stress and pain and hurt, rejection and loneliness was so much that I was sitting on that brown carpet of that brother's living room literally shaking from head to foot!!! Then it got even worse! My body was literally JERKING as I was sitting there. But thank God I knew a secret. Of course there was another factor: because I was alone again the gates of hell could prevail against me. Just the day before there were at least three stones built together and the gates of hell could not prevail against building but now I was a stone alone and its awful difficult for a man to be alone in a city without the building and to stand up against the forces of hell. You had better be a Paul or something. Let me say something right now to all you scoffers out there who are reading this and mocking me and laughing at how full of nonsense is this silly brother who writing all these things is! First of all, if that is your case YOU DON'T HAVE A CLUE AS TO WHAT SPIRITUAL REALITY IS! 2ND, YOU HAVE BEEN BLINDED BY SATAN TO THINK THAT THOSE LITTLE THINGS HE DOES TO YOU TO KEEP YOU ASLEEP PROVES YOU ARE ON THE RIGHT TRACK. JESUS SAID WHOOOOAAAAA UNTO YOU IF ALL MEN SPEAK WELL OF YOU!!!!!!!!!!!! I WOULD SAY YOU'D BETTER REPENT! THE FACT IS HE BOTHERS YOU A LITTLE TO DECEIVE YOU INTO THINKING THAT YOU ARE ON THE RIGHT PATH AND THAT YOU REALLY BOTHER HIM WHEN ALL ALONG HE'S GOT YOU UNDER HIS LITTLE FINGER IN THE ORGANIZED CHURCH RIGHT WHERE HE WANTS YOU AND HE FEELS AS SECURE ABOUT YOU AS AMERICANS DO ABOUT THEIR LIFE AND

WHEN HE THINKS OF YOU HE SMILES AND YAWNS!!!! HE CAN GO TO SLEEP SOUNDLY CAUSE HE'S NOT BOTHERED AT ALL BY YOUR LIFE!!!! Now doesn't this stir you up at least a little bit? Probably not. But unless you can get into this as and then beyond it to the full freedom to where you know what I have just said is not real because you are buried and raised with Christ and seated together and forgiven and blended with the Body and FREE from all things ..... well..... the bottom line is you need to fall upon your face and beg the Lord for a revelation of HIMSELF as truth and then keep on reading this and all the other books I've recommended. Because it will, if you follow on after this to get these realities in your life, give you an experience of abundant life.

To get back to the story, this demonic attack was so bad that I was sitting there trying to control myself but I was violently shaking like an old man, you know. And then the brother stood up and he said "Now brother, I know you feel a lot of tension and stuff..." he said, "but I've called for one of the elders from the Fire Escape to come here and meet with you tonight and talk with you about these things." Inside me I was saying "Yeah! Thanks a lot brother! That's just what I need!! (of course I'm being sarcastic) But idiot was at this point my body actually started jerking and the enemy wanted to take control of me and probably make a total fool of me as the evil ones literally started to POUR hatred and cruel unkindness into my heart. At this point I needed to calm down so at least I grabbed one weapon to fight back. (Would to God I knew how to fight then like I know now!) Because I finally realized the hand of the enemy somewhat I started to call upon the Name of the Lord. I started calling out loud "LORD JESUS" "OH LORD JESUS" " OH LORD JESUS!!" Finally I stopped shaking and got enough peace to where my body was back under my control. But the damage done to my soul was inestimable.

During this time here is an example of some of the multitudes of thoughts going through my head. You see, the devil doesn't come to you as the devil. He would never be able to deceive you this way. He comes as GOD! That's right! Or as an angel of light. In my case of course he was pretending to be the chastening hand of God and boy did he pity poor little me! THAT should have told me it was the enemy right there. Why? Because self-pity is of the devil! So is fear! And there was all kinds of fear there. But it was not the fear of God. The fear of god melts your heart and makes you want to come to Him and truly repent. The Satanic fear causes you to shrink from the Lord and want to run away and hide and even commit suicide because of the broken up feelings with in and the sense of self worth goes down. **JESUS NEVER DESTROYS YOUR SELF WORTH. YOU ARE WORTH SO MUCH TO HIM THAT HE GAVE HIS BLOOD FOR YOU PRICELESS SOUL AND NO ONE HAS EVER HONOURED YOU MORE THAN JESUS CHRIST WHO HONOURED YOU BY LAYING DOWN TO BE NAILED TO THE CROSS!!!!** YOU are worth that much to Him!



To continue: the thoughts I experienced were: "how do you know this local church thing is right?" "Maybe you're wrong" "How could you be right and EVERYONE ELSE around you is wrong?" "You are too proud!" " Why don't you humble yourself!" " You are just trying to exalt yourself in the Kingdom of God!" " Get off your high horse! You're too un-teachable and won't listen to others." " Maybe you don't love your brothers and sisters!" " Maybe YOU are the one who is WRONG!" "Just give this idea up and you'll have peace!" Don't you think with all this trouble its just not worth it?" "What are you doing?" "You're going to lose everything!" "What about your wife, she probably won't agree with you either and THEN where will you be!" "How do you know the local church is right?" "How do you know God didn't give you these orders to Charleston to take you away from the local church?" "These are you brothers and sisters!" "How do you know you weren't in a false group?" "How do you know God didn't take you out of it and give you these orders to get you away from it???" "Oh! That thing about God asking you to raise up a church in Charleston, how do you know that was God? Maybe it was just a still small voice!" "You might as well just be with these other Christians" "Why you having such a hard time?" "Just meet with them!" "Be with them, ya know! You need the fellowship!" "You know, these brothers and sisters are probably saying something. " "you know, God deals with you through brothers and sisters!" "You know you should listen to your brothers and sisters!!" "Do you think you are the only one in the world who is right and everybody else is wrong?" "I'm (here was a demon trying to pretend to be the Holy Spirit and saying "I'm" as if he were God) trying to chasten you to bring you back to fellowship with your brothers and sisters. You should love your brothers and sisters. Can't you see that what you are doing is causing dissension, heartache and trouble. Aren't you a trouble maker?" This questioning went on for not just that confrontation but for all that tortuous night and all of the next day. Hey! Have you ever noticed that a snake is in the shape of a question mark? But the enemy said "Why are you such a trouble maker with your brothers and sisters? NOW I'M MAD!!! EXCUSE ME DEVIL!!! BUT I'M GOING TO BE EVEN MORE AND MORE OF A TROUBLE MAKER IF I HAVE TO - - TO TELL THE TRUTH!!!!!!!!!! I'M GOING TO TELL IT LIKE IT IS!

Anyway, this is just a small sample of some of the things I was being flooded with. Some of the other things that were happening inside me are indescribable and I don't even know how to write about them. I have NEVER before then or since then ever endured such a warrior-like intense attack of Satan not just from a demon or two but from the very armies of hell! How would YOU withstand such a thing? Think about it. Or would the devil even think twice about you? Do you know what the front lines of battle are really like? Do you REALLY have any idea how downright bloody and ugly it can get? Have you ever been brutally and cruelly wounded and crucified? Physically, spiritually, emotionally or mentally? And then have you been left exposed and naked and out there alone to just rot! Have you ever been disliked and hated and rejected? Ugly is the only word that can describe a crucifixion and it includes being stripped, embarrassed, losing

your dignity, your pride, your face, and your reputation through gossiping, hurtful lies and innuendoes. I'm not suggesting that you go after these things, no way, but THAT'S the front lines and if you've never been through any of this you have not gone very far in the things of God or in following the footsteps of the nail pierced feet of the Crucified! Oh Jesus! Please lead us to Your throne! Oh! But there's a cross before there's a throne!!!! How can you sit with Him on His throne if you endure no cross???? Amy Carmichael once wrote in a poem: "could it be he has followed far who has no wound, no scar?"

Now don't get me wrong in all this. The Christian life is usually not one bloody ugly hell on earth, usually it is outpoured kindness, blessings and the mercies of God following all the days of your life and even during the days I have just mentioned, but there are times that there is a price to pay to follow Jesus Christ and the question is do you have enough of his love, grace, riches, unfailing kindness, revelation, truth and reality of the burning desires of the very heart of the Lord within you to withstand the pressure when your fiery testing days will come? Or does God even dare bring you to such a test? Maybe you would blow up!!! Or the other question is: Is the devil even the slightest bit interested in giving you any hell?? That's something you should consider. BUT maybe you shouldn't. Maybe, Oops! REALLY you just need to get hungry after Jesus and hunger after LOVING THE LORD JESUS AND EVERYTHING ELSE WILL FOLLOW IN ITS TIME! But soon you will see that you'll have to learn to love Him not merely for yourself but for HIMSELF.

I do not know if it is true but I have in many times since thought that the devil himself engineered all of the demons in the whole state of South Carolina as it seemed there was at least a thousand of them launched against me. It seemed that the enemy forgot the rest of the Christians in the state and as if his attitude was "these other Christians don't bother me. I can relax and drink a coke and watch TV and just kick back with what they're doing but this guy: he bothers me." Because if Christians would get together the way I'm talking about here then Jesus can get His Body. If Christians get actually built up so that the Head Christ can actually express His life through His Body on earth, then once again Jesus will walk throughout the land. Then once again Jesus will pour His love out in our land and where will that put the poor old devil? Crushed under His feet in a million pieces! (sadistic aren't I?!!)

To continue, after I got some peace by calling on the name of the Lord, He actually gave me something to say but it was not what He could have given me had I been better founded in the truth at that time. He reminded me of a man named Ignatius and how Ignatius because he got off of the Word of God on one small itty bitsy verse in Scripture, he corrupted almost the whole kingdom eventually and was one of the most responsible ones for causing the growth of the worldly clergy laity system. I think he lived the 2nd or so century and had known the apostle John so credence was given to his teaching. The problem? He did not see that the elder and the overseer (or bishop) according to Paul's letter to Timothy are the same man. So he started the thing of a "head elder" (whoops! Here we go subtracting from the one and only Head Jesus Christ again). Calling

the man a Bishop. Soon there was a Head Bishop in a central city over the head bishops in the surrounding cities. This became the hierarchy of the Catholic Church headed by the topmost head bishop, the pope who is the ultimate head of the church in the whole world with a chain of command system beneath him. Of course even in the first century with Jerusalem Satan was already trying to birth the concept of the "mother church." From this and not seeing that the book of TITUS (would to God Ignatius had read it!) PROVES that elders and bishops are the same guy " 5 For this reason I left you in Crete, that you should set in order the things that are lacking, and appoint elders in every city as I commanded you- .... Then: 7 For a bishop must be blameless, as a steward of God, not self-willed, not quick-tempered, not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, ... "and they are older more experienced brothers watching, caring and serving others, never lording it over them. (As Peter said in I Pet. 5:3).

With this line of reasoning I was able to barely keep my head above water as far as holding my own in conversation and trying to prove I had a valid point but, unfortunately, the attack had accomplished quite some work over on me and 90% of the heart and heat was knocked out of me. I was like a boxer punched one too many times in the ring and was on the verge of giving up and falling over, a bloody mess. Within, I felt like giving up and was saying (or was I hearing?) within "What's the use?" this is the inward awful struggling I was going through as the so called "elder" from the fire escape also named Richard arrived and we once again went out to eat.

After this and into the next day all these doubts and volumes of flooding thoughts kept torturing me, killing my self worth, depressing me, even daring to border on suicide kind of feelings but not daring to give me those kinds of thoughts as I figure now Satan thought they would surely be exposed as the enemy instead of the fake chastening hand of God. The thoughts went on: "How do you know the local church is right?" "How do you know God didn't give you these orders to Charleston to take you away from the local church?" "These are you brothers and sisters!" "How do you know you weren't in a false group?" "How do you know God didn't take you out of it and give you these orders to get you away from it???" "Oh! That thing about God asking you to raise up a church in Charleston, how do you know that was God? Maybe it was just a still small voice!" "You might as well just be with these other Christians" "Why you having such a hard time?" "Just meet with them!" "Be with them, ya know! You need the fellowship!" "You know, these brothers and sisters are probably saying something. " "You know, God deals with you through brothers and sisters!" "You know you should listen to your brothers and sisters!!" "Do you think you are the only one in the world who is right and everybody else is wrong?" "I'm (here was a demon trying to pretend to be the Holy Spirit and saying "I'm" as if he were God) trying to chasten you to bring you back to fellowship with your brothers and sisters. You should love your brothers and sisters. Can't you see that what you are doing is causing dissension, heartache and trouble. Aren't you a trouble maker?" All these kinds of thoughts were producing fear in me. All these kind of thoughts were producing DOUBT in me causing me to doubt the Word of God where it says there's one church in one city! Now I don't care if all the Christians on



the WHOLE EARTH don't believe this, brother, I'll stand by myself and believe because I've had such an assurance from God through this experience!!!! This experience put such an assurance and faith inside of me. This experience put a strength in me. THROUGH THIS EXPERIENCE I COULD FACE ALL HELL AFTER THIS HAD ALL HAPPENED. NOW HELL WANTS TO COME AT ME, C'MON!!!!!!! C'MON DEVIL, SEE WHAT YOU CAN DO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! I'LL TELL YOU BROTHER! WE NEED TO GO THROUGH THINGS LIKE THIS! IF YOU GET ON YOUR FACE BLEEDING FROM THE DEVIL, MAN, IT'LL GET YOU MAAAADDDDDDD AT THE DEVIL!!!!!!!!!! IT'LL PUT THE LION OF THE TRIBE OF JUDAH IN YOU!!!!!!!!!! IT'LL PUT THE LION INSIDE!!! IT'LL MAKE YOU ENRAGING MAD AT THE DEVIL!!!!!! IT'LL PUT THE WRATH OF GOD AGAINST SATAN IN YOU HEART. FROM THAT DAY I BECAME A PART OF THE ROARING OF THE ONE WHO IS ALSO CALLED THE LION OF THE TRIBE OF JUDAH, YOU KNOW, THE ONE WHO ROARS!!!!!!!!!!!!!! IT'LL DO SOMETHING TO YOU TO MAKE YOU TAKE A STAND!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Now don't you think there has been too much strife in the Kingdom of God and not enough love and caring for one another. How could those Christians have hurt me the way they did? Maybe they didn't mean to hurt me. Maybe, Satan just knew how to work to get in real close for an all out attack to try to destroy me. Whew! That was too close for comfort. But what I'm saying is isn't it a shame the way we Christians treat one another sometimes with all the abuse and negligence? There should not be all this fighting and hurt that results from it and also results from throwing around certain forces within us that were created within us for a reason. That being anger, viciousness, animosity, rage, hate, bitterness and venom! These abilities that are within us need to be employed somewhere so why don't we turn them to where they're supposed to go? ONTO THE DEVIL!!!! IF ALL OF US WOULD GET MAD AT THE DEVIL AND LOVE THE LORD AND TURNED ALL OUR ANGER TOWARDS SATAN AND POUR IT WHERE ITS SUPPOSED TO BE Poured, WE WOULDN'T HAVE TIME TO BE FIGHTING EACH OTHER!!! Some of you however who read this book may be thinking I'm fighting against YOU and your thoughts and traditions. Good night, don't be so sensitive! I am not against any child of God rather I am for them and that is why I will rebuke you if you need it in truth, in love and in meekness. It is not the believers I am against, it is the walls between them. And by the way it is not Christians I'm blaming or laying the blame to in this book it is their tradition. It is the SYSTEM that divides Christians that is the problem and if people of God are still involved in it, it

is usually because they are deceived 9 times out of ten and who am I to judge who are the other maybe 10%, if that's what it is?

This guy, the other Richard, (you remember the one? He was the one who came out 1st, the night of the spit-tuewee' episode concerning "the authority of God") didn't spend as long as Ron talking to me but we were there till 11:00. It was much too late before a work day for a mere lowly mess crank who's got to be at work at 0500 in the morning.

Well, of course this conversation about the things of God proved to be a pearls before swine session also as this brother Richard took his version at least of what he thought I said back to Ron and fed it to that twisted mind. Then it probably went in one ear and got twisted again before it got to the other side of his head and went out the other ear, if you know what I mean. There was a lot of bias here, but to this day I do not think Ron Gatrelle knows half of what was or has really happened to me. Soon after I write this I plan to look this dear brother up and let him get a hold of this so he can see the real facts and possibly be healed of some things. Anyway, its possible that this report from Richard to Ron (which is a fact according to people who told me that that is why Richard came to see me that night, namely to report back what I believe and what my allegiance was to) added fire to the flame which finally led to spitting episode.

Any how, if you, my dear brother Ron, gets a hold of this book, I would like to say thanks to you and thanks to God for you, brother, because without you the most important revelation of the entire 20th century would not have been made possible.

## Chapter 20

### On Into the Darkness: Hades Gates Prevail; The Keys Get Lost!

January the 2nd, 1984

After the very late night dinner with the "elder" Richard, it was about 11:00 o'clock. So we called it a night and drove back home. Of course this was too late for us sailors, but when you're young you can stay up all night sometimes if you know what I mean. January the 2nd was a Monday and if you'll remember they really want me there by 0500 at the latest but would rather have me in by 0400. Well, by the Sovereignty of God again I woke up late! THIS time as it turned out the Lord got me to work at such a time as no one said anything or noticed or maybe they were just too busy with the preparation of Breakfast to care.

But when I awoke around 0500 I think it was, I panicked as I had heard all the horror stories of people going to Captain's mast and losing a rank just for being late! This is an actual fact and many times the Navy does not fool around. It's possible for such offenses as skipping work (U.A. or unauthorized absence), talking back to a superior, disobeying orders, etc. to go to mast and get restricted to the ship for 45 days (or more depending on the offense). Along with that you could lose half your pay for 2 months with 2 hours of extra duties for those 45 days also. Of course, when I awoke the devil was still with me breathing down my neck and saying that I was the subject of the Father's chastening because I insisted on my weird teachings and needed to lay it down and that this was God's chastening. He just never quit for those 2 days at all!!!

Again let me say that if things had not happened like this exactly as it did this book would not be written. Every last detail of everything that happened became part of the painting that revealed such an awesome mystery. If I had woke up with plenty of time and everything was hunky dory, I never would have run to Richard's place. In fact, I would have done like I did in subsequent mornings after that: walk out to the street corner and hitchhike. Of course not only was their schedule for going to work later than mine but right after this whole experience they both went out of state on leave for close to a month. Any way, for quite some time when I first joined the military before I got a car I would hitchhike. Except in uniform that is as it was against regulations to hitchhike in uniform. But on this particular morning that could not be considered as an option as I was running late as it was. Richard and Ny were kind of talking kind of off to the side and so seemed quite distant from me the night before while I talked with the other Richard so there was a definite wall between Richard and I but what could I do? Not only I needed to get up and hardly even brush my teeth but also I needed to run out the door, run to Richard's house and wake him up before I got in trouble. (By the way, let me go on record saying I



don't blame the devil for me being down. If you are spiritually down and dejected it is your fault and I mean fault. You cannot be held totally responsible for being down emotionally, mentally, or physically but my faith was not strong and my trust was lacking so I was open to the enemy spiritually in a way I have NEVER been since that time.)

Now let me say right off the bat, I didn't feel very good at all. I felt like death warmed over I felt so tired. Secondly, I had gone sleep entirely torn up emotionally inside and the worst thing about it all was I was low on hope. The hope of my hearts desires being fulfilled for the kind of Christian life I desired to live seemed to be taken away from me. Also it seemed as if I were being condemned for even having such hopes as if I were a criminal or a heretic. So on top of my physical down condition, I was down emotionally, spiritually and mentally ... BUT there was no time allotted me to mope around! I had to get up and move it! move it! move it!

### On Into The Storm

I tore out of my apartment into .... RAIN RAIN RAIN!!!! The black clouds and slight rain from the previous evening had become a deluge! It was literally pouring rain from black skies and since the sun hadn't even peeped yet it was even worse! A full blown storm! The only light was from the dull, dismal super pale orange or rather peach colored lights that sort of lit up the parking lots between buildings. The water was splashing up into my pants legs from mud puddles that were probably an inch deep or more but I didn't care. I just kept running.

Now the Sovereign Hand of the Almighty stepped into this poor earth again and what I'm writing next ... again, these things all happened with in about 40 seconds yet there is so much that took place in those 40 seconds I have to write and write. I'm going to say GO for the beginning of these 40 seconds and then IT'S OVER when I'm done writing about that frame of time, OK? Here's where the title of this book comes from: GO: As I was running I LOST MY KEYS!!!!!! Somehow, they just jumped out of my pocket and fell into a puddle and I ran about three or four more paces as they fell and were gone!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Of course it took a passage of 3 or 4 paces to realize something had slipped out of my pocket. When I realized it, I stopped frozen and suddenly turned around and looked behind me!!!! When I did (which was the very moment I realized it happened) something like a fist seemed to hit me so deep within! When I turned of course there was nothing but a dull, dismal dark peach colored orange light in which you could hardly see reflecting off of several mud puddles, which were each being assaulted with multitudes of hard raindrops everywhere. These puddles were at least 1 inch deep and I suddenly realized there was just no way! Them there keys were lost!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Gone forever! No way would I find them in all that water and darkness. It took me only 2 seconds to realized that and knowing that I could be in trouble and that it would be foolish to try to find them

again, I went on running.

Now that feeling that "hit me" deep within and felt like a fist deep in my spirit had happened at the exact moment that I realized something had fallen out of my pocket. It was a negative feeling but it was so deep within that I knew that THAT at least was one place in a human being that no one could reach except GOD. So I KNEW I just KNEW it was some kind of sign, this losing of my keys. God was saying "something" to me but what it was I just couldn't figure out. But it was obviously a negative feeling as if something were wrong. Or maybe I was wrong! What's interesting about this is that Satan was still breathing down my back at the same time. Did he know that the Lord had communicated something to my spirit? Can Satan know such activities are going on deep within or did he just attack because he was using every arsenal in his inventory and imagination during that spiritual storm to assault me during that time frame? I don't know. But the enemy did seem to know there was a spiritual communication through the loss of the keys and my thoughts were suddenly twisted upon that note and those thoughts were almost ringing in my ears as I continued to run. "The reason you lost your keys is because YOU'RE WRONG!" "You need to take your crazy ideas and give them up. The reason you lost your keys is cause your wrong and God is chastening you for your trouble making heresies!!! If you'd just lay this idea down everything would be alright!" Yeah! OK! It probably would have been OK cause the devil would have laid off! Of course this all had much more meaning to this human being than someone else who is not bothered by losing their keys. You see, I hate losing my keys! It bothers me to no end when it happens which is rare because I take great precautions against it. Now you have to realized what else this meant to me based upon my schedule. Do you remember the every other week thing? I was now entering upon the Monday, Wednesday, Friday work till 1900 (7:00 at night) week and then the weekend and I knew that the apartment complex would be closed (their office closed at 5:00 o'clock) by the time I got off work that night so to get another set of keys to my apartment would be impossible unless I got special time off and to get special time off you have to make arrangements with the Navy ahead of time so they can cover their bases and feed everyone or whatever it is they're doing. This meant that I would have to sleep on the ship that night!!! And here I just got a place to call my own and already I was deprived of it. Of course the devil at the same time he chided me about losing my keys also made a thing of the fact that I couldn't sleep at my apartment that night. He used that one to say it was a chastening of the Lord due to my being a heretic who should be rejected by Christians at large! That devil just doesn't miss a trick, does he? Well neither does the Lord!! Except the Lord is far wiser than the old slew foot! What was so strange is that the Lord too had provided for this situation by having me have two sets of keys. I still had another set that was for my rack on the ship so I still had my shipboard keys. The only set I had lost was the keys to my apartment, and those could be replaced when I would get off on Tuesday by the apartment office, whereas the other keys to my rack and locker onboard could not have been replaced. Of course I didn't think about that fact at that time. I only realized I still had the keys to my rack and would be able to sleep in it that night. At

this point with a desperate cry I cried out from deep within me, "GOD, what does this all mean????!!?" OK, IT'S OVER. The 40 seconds is finally over. I know you're saying no way that all happened in 40 seconds. That's what I'M saying as I look back now, too. But that's how things happen and sometimes we don't see any significance until later.

Then I got Richard's house and rang his door bell over and over. He came to the door and looked like a sleeping mess! He looked at me with very little pleasure, I could tell as if I hadn't come he would've been able to get an hour and a half more sleep. i mean here's a brother he had just had a fall out the night before and he comes to the door in the wee hours asking for a lightning bolt ride to work through a lightning bolt storm! Yeah right! Well, he could have told me to get lost at that point but then made the right choice and took me to the ship. As we drove to pier Charlie early that Monday morning neither of us spoke a word to each other. I could feel the presence of Satan breathing down my neck and it was started to be a tormenting thing. The thoughts from the enemy still kept on: "this local church thing is a cult and you need to quit making an issue out of it!!" Just like the devil, huh? But God wants us to make an issue for the truth. At this point, I felt as if my head had been put in a vise and there was this burning sensation around my scalp and all the rebuking in the name of the Lord was not doing much to help. Along with the burning sensation around my head there was such a chill. This was because Richard and I didn't dare speak a word to one another. Do you see what Satan wants to do to relationships between believers? It was the most chilling cold time I've ever had with a fellow believer in all my life. But as we made the journey over there at least there began to be some anger towards the enemy and I began to see his hand in all of this. I began to realize God was not the author of fear as Paul had written, "God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power and love and of a sound mind." God is not the author of self-pity either. Another thing was confusion. God is NOT the author of confusion and I sure was confused so here I began to see the hand of the enemy. At this point though something needs to be said. These truths about what we practice as Christians being different from what the first century believers practiced brings confusion seemingly to some of the Christians I have shared it with. As a result I have many times been labeled as a trouble making heretic. (I've kind of grown accustomed to the term and even like being called it now!) At this point let me point out that today's Christianity is already so wrong that when the truth comes the situation of already existing confusion becomes apparent and these young believers suddenly feel confused whereas before the truth came around they didn't feel confused at all! The real truth is I have never met anyone who has become established in the truths I'm talking about who has EVER been the least little bit clouded or confused about these things again! **I HAVE NEVER BEEN THE LEAST BIT CONFUSED SINCE THESE EVENTS FOR YEARS AND YEARS AND THAT'S A FACT!!!**

Another thing that was happening inside was that this cry to God which had begun the night before on the way to the restaurant to talk, was getting bigger inside me. The cry was: "What's going on? Why don't You speak to me? I need You to tell



me if I'm wrong about this, not merely someone else." That cry combined with the fact that God had at least communicated with me in the losing of my keys BY THAT NEGATIVE FIST HIT TYPE FEELING DEEP IN MY INNER MAN comforted me just a little that there was something to all this and something mysterious and strange was going on. As Richard drove through that pelting darkness and rain with his windshield wipers on maximum speed a determination formed within my heart. I used the words of David and cried out:

To You I will cry, O LORD my Rock:  
Do not be silent to me,  
Lest, if You are silent to me,  
I become like those who go down to the pit.

At this point I determined within before God, "God, I'm going to work like crazy today, I'm going to do my utmost to get everything done as Your Word says you reward those who diligently seek You. So I'm going to do my utmost to get off work as early as possible by 1900 (7:00 o'clock) tonight and I'm going to go hit my rack (Navy term for getting into your bunk bed to turn in for rest) and I'm going to pray and pray and pray, until I get an answer from You! I've got to know what's going on here Lord! I'm going to get a hold of You through prayer even if it takes all night!! I'm going to pray and pray till I get hold of the horns of the altar and move the hand of God on my behalf to ANSWER ME PLEASE!!!!

At this point I started asking God all the questions that were bothering me so deeply. (or was it the enemy? I couldn't tell) "God, why did I lose my keys? Am I right or wrong? Did You, or did You not tell me that I was sent to raise up a church here in this locale? What about now? I can't get anyone to listen to me and probably never will. Why did You send me to a locality where there is no local church if I am not to build one up? Am I supposed to forget about this whole thing? Be not silent unto me lest I be like them that go down to the pit!" Heck, man, I was already in a pit so deep it was like a quagmire and seemingly got even more depressed. The questions went on. The accusations went on. The onslaughts of the enemy went unmercifully on. The feelings of being useless, worthless, and no good went on. The feelings of loneliness went on. The confusion went on. The fears and torments went on ..... and on ..... and on and on. And on.

At least I did one smart thing when I got to the ship. I WORKED! I poured myself into such a hard working labor that there have been few days in my life that equal it. The doubts were still there. The agony was still there. All the questions were still nagging at me in the back of my head. The floods of thoughts and rejection feelings were still hurting me and nagging at me BUT tried to keep busy enough to ignore them. It was move it, move it move it for me that day! And ..... we did get off at 1900 that night, the earliest possible time.

## Chapter 21

The Mystery Revealed! The Keys! An Old Wineskin in a Rack! His Ways are NOT Our Ways!

...Still January the 2nd, 1984..

Now I was off work. I had worked harder that day than perhaps any in my life. Something was driving me. Or was I motivated by my curiosity? Well I should have been! I sped straight to the berthing and got to my rack as soon as possible. My rack was a top rack. On most Navy ships the racks are stacked 3 high. So mine was the third up from the deck and in a cubicle across from the TV lounge. Years later as a second class petty officer I took many buses when the USS Jason (which was my ship then) had made a stop in Guam which was where the Holland was that year (1984) just to go look at the rack where I had had such an experience with God. It was like a trysting place for me. The rack was still there, but the TV lounge had moved!

I pulled myself up into that rack and wasted no time. I started praying as if I was a storm. I had determined to beat on the gates of heaven (excuse the idiom), so to speak, until the Father opened His door and answered my cry and answered my question and solved the mystery. I thought I would be able to get somewhere with God because I used to spend whole nights with God in prayer at times and learned how to travail in prayer. I THOUGHT I KNEW HOW ALWAYS TO prevail with God and even had seen healing and outpourings of revival influence of the Holy Spirit in answer to my prayers, so I dreamed I would get through!

NOT!!!!

They say "He may not come when you want Him but He's always right on time!" Take Lazarus for example. The Lord did not heal him as requested. He waited and let him die first! The question is do you want mere power or do you want to know Him in life? How about knowing resurrection life?

I started first in my prayer by asking, "God, why did I lose my keys this morning? Are You chastening me? Do I need to be straightened out? Is it true that I'm an un-submissive rebel who is what my thoughts are saying and these brothers and sisters are saying. Is this the devil accusing me, the brethren, or are you convicting me? What am I doing in a city without a local church? Did You bring me here to get me away from it? Lord, if it ain't Your will for me to be in a local church reveal that to me. And if You want me to be here to raise up the church, I got to have a word from You. What is happening to me? What is

going on in my life? I am torn up!!!" I got desperate before ..... God? I kept on and I said "God, I just got to have an answer from You, You know?" and went on praying and praying and praying. Then I said "Lord, don't be quiet to me, lest I be like them that go down to the pit." And I prayed and prayed and prayed. And I tried to pray with everything within me. But there wasn't much within me because there was .. no unction or movement of the Spirit. ... .. Has this ever happened to you? Have you ever prayed and it seemed God wasn't listening? Have you ever prayed and it seemed He had just shut His door for the night, had gone to bed and just wasn't interested? How many times have you just lost faith because it seemed He was saying flat no, or "SORRY, I DON'T CARE." Or .. "I'm on vacation to Holland or Bermuda." From the beginning of my prayer and on there was no inspiration of any kind. Even when I called on the name (which ALWAYS brings the Spirit whether you feel Him or not but you usually do when you call on His name!) of the Lord Jesus. There was a metal frame which was a sort of overhead for the rack which housed the reading light, etc. and that piece of metal seemed to be as far as my prayer went up and then bounced back into my face. I felt like a piece of dead wood and felt as if I was wasting my time and getting no where. The heavens were not only just brass heavens, it seemed as if there WAS no heaven and as if God didn't even exist! Now I don't know if you have ever prayed in a situation like this but one thing is for sure. Most people give up and quit when they don't feel anything. Especially when they feel like I felt like less than not feeling anything. Like a mouth full of sand! Like getting no where. Like having 3 million problems and seemingly God is not interested in a one of them! I mean probably not! After all, there is no indication that He is. He seems to be taking no notice whatsoever. Let me warn you! Do not lose faith in love of God. Sometimes God will allow a feeling like this for a lot longer than what He allowed it for me!

After one hour of this kind of "dead wood" praying, I got tired. I was completely exhausted. After all, I had worked hard that day. I had worked until the sweat poured off my body. I had worked until my whole breathing and heartbeat had changed its pace for some extent of time! (Not really! I'm not THAT awesome! C'mon!) I had worked until I was well spent and worked myself up into a energized state to where everything was go! Go! Go!, but the body comes to a point where it turns around and says, no! No! No! I was suddenly sleepy, exhausted, worn out, defeated, tired, confused, frustrate, miserable, lonely and flat out exasperated all at once! I find it impossible to describe. So I decided to give up. And here I had almost vowed earlier in the day and had determined that I was going to spend all night in prayer to God if I had to and knock down the door of heaven! I was going to take Jesus literally and 1. Ask 2. Seek 3. Knock .. until the door was open and I received from God, but alas! Here's this guy who had been so determined and who was the same guy who's spent many a rough night in prayer getting answers from God giving up just like those guys in the garden so long ago! Here I said "God where are you? Why won't You even come near me (ha! He was so close it could not even be conceived!)" After an hour of that I was totally wiped out.

That was it. I was not only through, and empty, and spent, and tired, and



depressed, and lonely, and rejected, and like I didn't have a friend in the world, and defeated, and down, and frustrated but I found it within me to be angry! (How could I? Oh Lord!) I was angry with the Lord that He wouldn't give me even the time of day. So I said "Fine!!!" I said "God, You don't want to talk to me tonight???? FINE!! GOOD--BYE!!!!!! See You tomorrow!" And it was as if I hung up the phone .. with a slam! Then I rolled over. I tried to go to sleep .. but I couldn't go to sleep because my scalp was itchy (now pay close close attention once more) and I was murky and murky and sweaty and ... wow! I had skipped taking a shower. I had been so desperate, and needy before God that I had put my dirty smelly body in that clean rack and I had not cared. There I was scratching my head over and over, down, miserable, depressed, had given up, tired, sleepy, too dirty to sleep, to tired to get up and do something about it .. my misery was complete!! There you go! I was dead! Boom!

Through long years in the military I have learned and seen that this not taking a shower thing I is quite a problem for sanitation as it effects other sailors even in such close quarters with others. Many times we had to call Medical to come inspect some guy because the guys was stinking up the berthing for everyone else. Sometimes we even took revenge ourselves and bodily took the guy and put him into a scalding hot shower and took a steel brush to the guy's bare skin and turned it red! Of course this is no longer tolerated in the military today, but we sure got the guy clean! Back to my story. If ever I needed a jump start, it was then. I was totally lonely, emotionally sick, mentally depressed, spiritually and physically exhausted, rejected, without hope (except for the glimmer of being able to call my wife the next day-- but I thought she would put me down for this too and felt I could share none of this with her - but even though I was looking forward to her and that's what kept me alive, I was still missing her terrible), and now I can't go to sleep! I'm in total misery! If ever I needed God, it was then.

And then ..

Then..

then .. God spoke to me ..

.. in a still small voice "Kevin ..

...My ears perked up as He again said "Kevin .. you need to take a shower."

!!

THAT woke me up! First I laughed. "H.. heh ha!" Then he said it again. Here I am. I'm torn to pieces within and totally upset, right? And here God comes to me and seemingly ignores all that and instead tells me I need to take a shower!!!

Then I got mad! I got so mad at God and I said:"WHAT!!!!????!!

What is this????????????????????

I'm DYING INSIDE and You want me to take a SHOWER???

"WHAT IS THIS?????!!?????"

Then the Lord said "Get out of your rack and open it up and get a book by Witness Lee. It's entitled 'The Genuine Ground of Oneness.' Get it out and start reading the first chapter." I thought "Oh, thank God, God is going to speak to me, but he's going to do it through a book by Witness Lee. OK, maybe I'm getting' somewhere!"

The Keys of the Kingdom of the Heavens!!!!

So I got the book out and crawled back into my rack and turned the reading light on. Now I had somehow bought this book in San Diego and had it all this time but had never started reading it as of yet. The first chapter was entitled "Oneness in the Four Great Acts of God." So I started reading it, right? And it talks about the keys of the kingdom of the heavens! Witness wrote that when the church is built up, the keys of the kingdom of the heavens work in power but when the church is not built up the keys CANNOT work in power. Then I said "Praise the Lord! That's why I lost my keys this morning!!!!" The lights turned on!!! I said "That's why I lost ... because we got in disunity and we lost the oneness, we weren't built no more. I lost the oneness with that couple and we had no more oneness anymore and because of that we weren't on the ground anymore. There was not at least three stones built on the ground anymore right? So God didn't have any building anymore so the gates of hell could come and prevail. Then I said "That's why hell was all over me!!! That's why Satan could come and attack me last night!!!!!"

Then Bro. Lee was saying in this chapter "before the Lord's Recovery came to this country we have seen none of the kind of spiritual warfare that we see today. We in the Recovery are small in number, especially compared to the Roman Catholic Church and the major denominations. Although we are small in number and seemingly insignificant, we are fiercely attacked and opposed. Behind this attack and opposition is the power of Satan, the gates of Hades. Before the Lord began to recover the church life in this country the power of darkness could afford to be at rest. But now that the Lord is in the process of building up the proper church life, this power rises up against the church. But the church has the keys of the kingdom of the heavens and these keys will prevail over the gates of Hades." WOW!!!!!!!

So we've GOT to have the building! Or Hades will prevail over us. Right? So I realized this. Wow!!!!!!! This is hitting me heavy, right?

The Inward and Outward Aspects of the Church

Then the next section of that chapter dealt with the matter of balance!! It was entitled: The Inward and Outward Aspects of the Church. He went on to say "Now that we see the importance of the church, most Christians only care about the inward aspect" or the testimony or the spiritual aspect and all that, right? But they don't care about the outward aspect, the appearance, or the ground of the church. They don't care about the ground of unity. "However it is ridiculous to care for one aspect and neglect the other.. we should have regard for the wineskin that holds the content.. the wine and we should have a high regard for the wine." Without the wineskin the wine cannot be held. The wine is going to

leak out. Without the proper container or the Body built up in unity how can God dwell in it? Without the temple built together how could God have a house? How can He have a container? Without the proper vessel you cannot hold the liquid. Right? And then he said "Our very existence as human beings testifies that we must care for both aspects. As humans we have an inward aspect - our soul and spirit and we have an outward aspect, our body. Although we appreciate our spirit and soul, we devote a great deal of attention to the care for our physical bodies. Actually most of the things in our culture are designed for the care of our physical existence. We dare not minimize the outward aspect of human life." !!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Then I said "THAT'S WHY GOD IGNORED MY INWARD NEED TONIGHT AND HE TOLD ME TO TAKE A SHOWER!!!!!!!!!! Because before I ever got in that rack I should have taken a shower. But you see Christians today they care about the spiritual but not about the outward or practical things of the ecclesia (I hate the word "church") but instead they just want to take care of the spiritual life. And as a result they don't have much life at all. Because they don't have a proper container to HOLD the life! It's leaking out!!!! See they don't have the proper unity. Then I said "THAT'S why God told me to take a shower!

It is here I'm going to insert a parable that was given me on these things. I share this parable elsewhere in a letter of mine that was later made a chapter of this book which you will see again in another section of this book. The parable has to do with balance. How there must be balance between the spiritual aspect of the Christian life and the practical. Actually the practical is sometimes the "container" of the spiritual and there will be no spiritual content left after it all leaks out if you don't take care of the practical things first! Sometimes the physical and practical comes before the spiritual but sometimes it doesn't so I've learned the hard way you must be careful. However, there is ALWAYS the need for balance between the two and for taking care of the wineskin as well as the wine. Here I would also once again refer you to Frank Viola's book: "Rethinking the Wineskin." My allegory is about a father who lives with his children in a condominium where the kitchenette is upstairs. Right next to it is also a living room where there is an expensive blue carpet. In the refrigerator is a carton of chocolate milk. The little children do not like the regular cups the father gives them but would rather have the paper cups. However in this story the paper cups are not made with the proper wax even so they already have holes and have sprung a leak. But these children know how to really "pray" so to speak and unceasingly cry out to Dad for the chocolate milk and hold onto their cups and will not let them go. Finally Dad gets mad and goes to the refrigerator and pours the chocolate milk at the kids even though he knows it will not get drunk and will stain the carpet all because the kids wouldn't quit crying for ... what? REVIVAL of course!

So you see? Both mysteries of that day had been revealed: 1. The Keys 2. The shower first before meeting the spiritual need. Then the Heavens opened and God spoke to me the way I had wanted Him to speak to me all along. It might as well had been an audible voice it was so powerful but it wasn't. first I was suddenly so filled with the Spirit from waaaayyyy deep within that there could be no mistake as THAT is where the voice came from. Also this voice seemed to resound



throughout the entire universe and its power shook me through and through and there was no doubt about the authority in that voice as to Who it was speaking. Rarely has God spoken to me like He did that night and usually He just moves in your spirit so you know the scriptures and does not make a habit of things like this but this time it was different and there is no doubt as I have tested it with every possible test. He said these six words only:

**I WANT MYYYYY BODY MYYYYY WAY!!!**

At this point the word of Isaiah 55:8,9 became so much more true to me than ever before and I saw that, yes, its really true that we don't really see things from God's standpoint that readily. We see things from our standpoint and to get into HIS view and His ways which are NOT our ways and His thoughts which are NOT our thoughts we really have to be willing to lay our WAYS AND THOUGHTS DOWN AND TURN TO JESUS CHRIST! Isaiah 55 says it well:

8 The LORD says:

"My thoughts and my ways  
are not like yours. 9 Just as the heavens  
are higher than the earth,  
my thoughts and my ways  
are higher than yours.

I've never heard such authority. I've never heard such authority before or since. There was so much power from those six words I can still feel the waves of the result of the Lord's speaking to me that night. It is like when a rock gets thrown in a pond. The waves will go out from it wave after wave after wave for quite awhile. And though the circles may not be as large then they were at first .. well, guess what? It's not like that with things eternal. Things of time wear out but the things out of the realm of eternity don't wear out, don't get frail, don't die and don't stop. The Word that God speaks is powerful forever and ETERNAL TOO!

So what does this mean? God wants all His children who meet in different denominations and different free groups, house groups -- it doesn't matter: He wants them to quit meeting their way and start getting together in His way. He wants them together HIS WAY! What does that mean? They are to be one assembly in one city! THAT is all who are Christians in a particular city or town need to see that they belong to each other and together whether they like it or not! But they meet with their different names. They are separate because of their different doctrines and they meet because of their different practices in different places, separate from one another, they don't even know one another and as a result the Lord doesn't even have His testimony. But if you'll come back to the oneness, in other words the local ground, in other words one assembly in one city saying we stand with ALL the believers. All the believers in this city are part of the one and only assembly that the scripture says is in this city because the scripture only allows one assembly (many home meetings of

that assembly is OK!)and we don't dare take any other name and we don't dare be anything else or say we're anything else than what GOD SAYS we are .. then God will have His testimony! And Satan will be kicked in the butt!!!!

America is a free country. If I want to go to my house and go to my living room and sit in my easy chair with a bad posture and throw one leg over the arm of the chair then I can do it right? Can't I? Well of course I can! I can have my body my way because it's a free country! AND NO ONE IS GOING TO STOP ME!!! But how about giving this liberty to Jesus Christ? Do we give the Lord even this much privilege to get HIS BODY HIS WAY??? What about Him? I tell you its not fair!!!! If you're not awake by now and listening to what I'm saying then I'll just tell you like it is and what kind of a person you really are whether you know it or not; whether you realize it or not! YOU OBVIOUSLY HAVE NO CONSIDERATION FOR THE LORD JESUS CHRIST BECAUSE YOU TAKE AWAY HIS WAY SO YOU CAN DO IT YOUR WAY!!! AND THAT'S WHO YOU ARE!!!!!!!!!! Ouch! And if that didn't hurt the way I intended it to, you're blind on top of everything else! Here I am in America! If I want to slouch I can. It may not be good for my posture but I can do it cause its my body and I want my body my way!

January the 3rd, 1984

Next day I called my wife being it was Tuesday and she said how come you didn't call me on New Year's day? I was ready to come to you then. And I said it was a good thing you didn't because you would have been out in the street because I lost the keys to our place!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!  
!! Do you see it? Because I lost the oneness hell prevailed and I lost the keys. Because I lost the keys, I lost my dwelling place! Because I lost the dwelling place, I lost my bride! Do you see it? I didn't have my wife because I didn't have a place to let her into. Because God don't have us in oneness He doesn't have His Dwelling place. So He also has no expression because He has no practical Body. Because He has no dwelling He has no building. And what is He building? His Bride! Because He does not have His house He does not have His bride! So if we lose the oneness, we lose everything! If there's no oneness, there's nothing! Because the bride is something built up.

After my wife arrived Wednesday and in the days following there seemed to me to be a time better than our honeymoon ever was and that was a sign to me also. There is something new about all of these things of course (of course I was delivered and the devil jumped in the lake! What do you think?) 1984 was the year Bro. Lee went Taiwan and started what he called the New Way!! This is no accident. It was the year he dropped the Sunday one man speaking the rest listening in all the local churches everywhere (unless some did not co-operate), let everyone witness on the streets and gave the ministry to all members of the Body. But more of this later. PRAISE THE LORD!!!

## Chapter 22

### HOW TO MAKE AND MAINTAIN A RELIGION - LOST FIRST LOVE - LEGALISTIC WORKS - HIRING BALAAM HOW TO MAKE AND MAINTAIN A RELIGION

How to create a Religion? Yup! You got it. This will be taken from the words of the Lord Jesus directly this time. These are the words concerning the seven churches. Since the same book in 1:3 claims it is a prophecy ( 3 Blessed [is] he that reads, and they that hear the words of the prophecy, and keep the things written in it; for the time [is] near. )

I also believe that along with most scholars that ALL the book of Revelation is a prophecy and that includes chapters 2 and 3 of this book. So I stand with the majority who believe these 7 "churches" (really ekklesia's) are a prophecy of seven ages. Now remember! I'm talking about the best and the majority!

1st of all what is a religion? It is man trying to reach God or serving God.

This is NOT grace which is God reaching and saving and transforming and ..... yeah! It keeps going and going! I think you get the basic picture.

#1. The first thing to cause a religion happened in the early church. It is believed that the message to Ephesus was to the first century believers. After the decline of those times the result was Smyrna which means suffering myrrh. This situation of persecution lasted for ten emperors of the Roman Empire rulers times (the "ten days tribulation) and was to try to purge the church and bring them back to their first love. The 3rd period of time is in the meaning of the word Pergamos: this means a marriage with the world. This happened when Constantine became the 11th emperor and invited the church to be one with the world and politics. We have always fared better when the world hated us. The 4th period of time which does not end but mentions the 2nd coming of Christ as the rest of the last 4 messages of the Lord do speaks of Thyatira::the Catholic Church. The city name this time means a perfumed sacrifice. Well everyone knows the Catholics burn the incense and have a lot of death. And there is also the matter of idolatry mentioned in this epistle. The fifth age concerns a place called Sardis: which means the remains. Remains of what? Now that is a tough question but here the Lord says they have a living name but says they are dead and there is some things that remain. This is thought by most to be the Protestant Reformation and all the Protestant Churches following. It also will survive until the coming of Christ. The 6th? Philadelphia, which means brotherly love. This refers to the age of the Plymouth Brethren and how they all ministered as brothers and as a result were restored to keeping the word of God and obviously had the love of God restored .... But alas! What did they become? Laodoea, they got away from heart riches into merely head knowledge doctrine riches and became the meaning of the word Laodoea: the opinion of the people. So now to repeat # 1: what was the main and FIRST cause of creating a religion? Easy! Get away from that burning first love toward Christ. This is the first issue in the heart of God. today's famous revival even though they have the wrong wineskin have emphasized returning to this love and so it has lasted longer than 5 years!

#2? Work harder for the Lord from a sense of duty! Well? Read that first epistle



again. He commended them for their works ,then more work - then the word labor - then after all that if that wasn't enough He said the last were more than the first. No put down for all that from the Lord BUT when you get your heart into these things and it gets away from God Himself and the loving of God there is a problem. **OUR WORKS SHOULD ALWAYS PROCEED FROM THE FIERY LOVE TOWARDS JESUS CHRIST WE HAVE WITHIN.**

#3? Ignore the chastening hand of God in your life that would turn you to Him.

#4 Receive the doctrine of Balaam in your midst. This is the logical conclusion of works out of duty instead of grace and love: namely: **THE ENERGY OF THE FLESH** and that done out of flesh instead of out of grace. The result? Less real fruit of course. So who was Balaam? He was a guy who gave his time for money in God's service and got paid for it. When the heart gets away from God there has to be more labor and energy of the flesh to get the same results so what is the answer? You got to hire somebody and pay them with a salary to do the work of the Lord. There was no such thing as a hired salaried guy in century one. It started with Constantine.

#5 Balaam leads to the Nicolaitans, except now the Nicolaitans are not just a practice it is a doctrine. Things start out as a practice but after awhile become a doctrine. Nicolaitans means the ruling class (nico) over the common people (laitans) or laity. Wow! The Lord was right! This has become such a doctrine now that you hear the word layman taught constantly along with our concept of leadership which we surely believe. How? Well, when you need more labor to make "it" happen, whatever "it" happens to be then you've got to come up with a different kind of Christian. One who works for God and earns a living as opposed to one who works for the world and earns his living. So now this leads to a feeling and/or a concept of higher and lower class Christians. And , of course the full time preacher or Christian worker is considered the higher class and better Christian. So **WE HAVE A CASTE SYSTEM IN THE KINGDOM!** OK, yes we know Paul said the laborer is worthy of his hire but he took a higher road (wow! He must have had his first love: he accomplished **MORE** than anyone in his time and did not even serve the Lord in his part time! He was not a part time tent maker, he was a **FULL** time tent maker and served the Lord in His spare **TIME!** I guess he must have had the right way down and quite an anointing to boot!) but **IF** there is a traveling man (and that's what they were) who got his money from the people of God he did not get a salary #1 and never asked for it or made his needs known #2.

There's much more to these 2 chapters as spoken by our Lord himself but that's about it as concerns this subject. #'s 3,4 and 5 are not even necessary to extend a religion or maintain it but they sure help out a lot. As you can see most of us were already born again surrounded by these things. They've already been around us for a long time. Recently I found out that there have been those in the Protestant Pentecostal circles blessed of God for over a 5 year period of time and although I believe some of their experiences need more discernment and are way off, listen to what I'm saying: for hundreds of years now there has

never been a poured out blessing in an area that has lasted for more than 5 years until just recently. And YES I do agree with you that in the situation right where you are and even if I don't totally agree with the way things are done GOD CAN BLESS! The secret of these Christians? Even though they still have Balaam's salaries and the Nicolaitans works and teachings they have EMPHASIED PERSONAL LOVE FOR JESUS BEING FIRST AND FOREMOST ABOVE WORKS!! HALLELUJAH!! Of course there are thousands literally being saved but that is kept secondary!! As a result the Lord's heart smiles at that! After all who is our God. Is He not mostly all heart? And is not His name and description LOVE?? For another more thorough view of how we got to where we are today into such a shallow dead weak boring Christianity as we have today, please stop and take the time to read Addendum # 2. This is also a must read.



## II. The Evangelism Trek

### Chapter 23

#### The Sacred Cow Today's Golden Calf

The Lord said "blessed is he who is not offended in me." All it takes is some misunderstanding and the Lord knows the most important thing we need towards Him besides humility without which we will make no promise is trust. There are just some things He cannot explain to us that happen to us in this present age and we'll have to trust and some of the questions will never be answered and we'll just have to trust. One example is how 400 years of generations of the children of Jacob who's name became Israel were born in chains lived in chains, cried out to a silent God day and night in chains and then died in chains. He finally answered through Moses BUT and if you think about it its a very great mystery: There are unanswered mysteries that no one has EVER had the answer to on that one!! There are many theologies today that cannot handle that time of history. If they tried they'd have to change some of their wealth and health doctrines!! Why did I say all that? I haven't got a clue! Except maybe to say that some of the things others have said about the ways of God do have some merit because He is bigger than my little mind or yours. Point is He is waaaay higher up above us and His thoughts are NOT our thoughts, neither His ways our ways and is past finding out. So ..... possibly what I am about to dare to write is just my opinion and maybe I'm wrong and could be judged for it. May the Lord have mercy on me if that is so? I KNOW for a fact that few will agree with me on this one. It's too too much of a sacred cow these days (maybe my opinion again) and probably you'll never agree with this but who knows maybe there's a remote chance a ray of light concerning God's eternal purpose may shine through as someday you may think about it , who knows? If you want PROOF on these things, do not stop but please read the next chapter also as it's very important. We see the 2nd birth through our eyes and humanly hope the best for everyone and that there'll be a changed life for as many as possible. But very few of us have had much of a view through the very eyes of God Himself and see and feel as He sees and feels from His standpoint. This I believe is the basic problem of the mess we're in. (Of course salvation is only one aspect of things as seen through 2 vantage points: there are other aspects as well) Paul of Tarsus wrote a letter once to the ecclesia in Thessalonica which were IN God the Father and Jesus Christ the Son!!! This should be OUR description of reality! We see the salvation experience as benefiting man and changing lives and meeting our needs and this is all well and good and of course God cares about the same things, much much more than we do. There is THE FATHER'S viewpoint which I believe has been missed and possibly not even well known. I do not believe that most fathers if they are wise will birth more children than they can properly care for unless



they are poor at planning and miscalculate their worth. Of course there is no problem with the Lord's worth, wealth, wisdom and care in any department material or spiritual. BUT we have been made to be co-creators with the Almighty (or pro-creators) both in the physical and spiritual realms even as Paul said "you have ten thousand instructors ...yet not many fathers; for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the glad tidings" .... hmmm, we are quite awesome beings; much more awesome than we can understand.

So? Have you heard of the film "Jesus"? Sure you have. Gene Edwards said something about it and he then said "I want to go on record!!" On record saying what? That he was against what they were doing with that film!! Please, can you tell me: what were they doing with it except winning souls. Weren't their motifs pure? From man's standpoint, yes! It was for soul winning alone. OK maybe some had a desire at least to build those new brothers and sisters as living stones into the Lord's living temple. BUT ..... is that building work a reality??? NO!..... Anyway, Gene went on record and probably hardly anyone agrees with him. There are most brothers I meet with in the so-called "house church" there in Olympia that would probably not agree (I know for sure some do not) but I do. Now I'll make it even harder for you to agree with me (it's not easy you know), even though you already don't by giving you some facts that maybe even Gene didn't know when he spoke what he spoke but I STILL agree with him anyway not cause of who he is... I don't agree with everything he says - but because I just agree on this point: there was a foreign country where the Jesus movie was shown in recent years. And when it was shown the Spirit so outpoured that hundreds of them broke down crying at the crucifixion scene and their sorrow was turned to joy at the resurrection and they were born again with great rejoicing. The Spirit fell with great power. And .... Gene faults this????? C'mon Gene!! The old guy has lost it!

OK then what about the backslidden preacher my friend knew 45 years ago that was such a pig he had another man besides himself sleeping with the woman he was sleeping with and there were alcohol & beer bottles laying all over the place but when he preached because he preached the gospel message (kind of like Billy Graham preached) sinners wept and got saved! At altar call after altar call!!! I guess the gifts and callings of God are without repentance. Do you think so???? Well, the Bible says so. So was it wrong for my friend to stop this man's ministry cold by pulling the sheets on his utterly sinful backslidden lifestyle? By George, NO!!!! A thousand times no!! The shame would have been worse if he got exposed any later than he did. Heck! It was bad enough as it was! Believe it or not, there have been many cases like this: Jimmy Swaggert was one of them. But Kevin! Think of all the the souls that didn't get saved because of this guy being exposed!!! I am thinking of them! And all the other souls in that city too!

So why would that film have an outpouring? The Word of God is anointed!! And it will accomplish what God spoke it for and will not return void. Just cause we procreate as unmarried people with God our Creator does not mean He won't allow human beings that were brought forth in this way to be brought forth!!! It does not mean it is His will that it be done that way either. But does He love His

children who may be brought forth the wrong way at the wrong time. Of course He loves those born of marriage or out of marriage. He loves those His children even though someone went to a foreign country and got them saved and did not follow up on them at all.

I do not believe we have any business not taking care of those who are birthed into life. Why were 3000 born again on the day of Pentecost and it was OK? There were 12 who were fathers who could care for that many and even more because they had spent 20,000 hours in the presence of God Almighty day and night.

I once knew a sister (it was Ny) who had a dream of God's people like skeletons just like Ezekiel's valley of bones. I will write more on this later. Suffice it to say, as she spoke in the meeting I saw the skeletons in a vision **EXCEPT** I didn't have your normal vision but rather saw them as the Father saw them: as if I were seeing my children... dear little children, dear little skeletons. Needless to say, right in front of everyone I put my head in my hands and wept and wept for 20 minutes till I had no more tears. Today's believers need the "prophesy again" the 2 sides of the gospel that Ezekiel was commanded to speak so that the skin, sinews and breath from the WIND would make them so living and strong.

I must add to this in another chapter, but before I close I must add something else. Charles Finney used to take the law and convict sinners with deep probing of conscience for many meetings before he finally brought them through maybe a week later to new birth. Years later, next generation. D. L. Moody used the same methods to convict and break up fallow ground UNTIL .... the Chicago fire one night in which many of those he was preaching to died and went to hell. Due to this fact he changed his methods (and most of us like blind sheep have followed his ways foolishly like sheep do ever since. **WE FELL FOR IT! YOU FELL FOR IT WHETHER YOU KNOW IT OR NOT!!!!**) and started having an altar call every night. The result? Deep conversions where deep repentance from sin was so real became a thing of the past. The statistics? 85% of Finney's converts followed the Lord true till death. Moody's? 15%. May we look back and at least learn something ..... not just from a tragic city fire **BUT FROM LASTING RESULTS AND ISSUES.**

## Chapter 24 The Valley of the Dry Bones - the Breath of God on Restored Unity

### The Valley of the Dry Bones

I hope I haven't offended you by some of what I have been writing but its super possible to offend when one attacks a sacred cow like I have been doing. Evangelism is one of the most sacred cows there ever has been and you are made to feel like a waste case and guilty with blood all over your hands if you are not involved in it. but GUESS WHAT?!?!? God proclaimed you not guilty 2000 years ago because He is the Savior and never gave that title to anyone else! OK I know that the privilege of working together with God to save others is a wonderful thing but that is just the idol I'm talking about: serving the Lord has for many brothers taken the place of God Himself and the thought I'm trying to convey to my fellow brothers in writing this part is this: "If God asked you to quit the ministry right now and lay it down for good, how would you react?" Wow! That's a question! (and again bro, don't get me wrong I am in no way implying that the Lord is saying this to you or singling you out, don't take this personally) The real question of course is : "Is our personal relationship and what makes Him happy more important to us than serving Him is to us?"

Now I hope you'll bear with me and listen to my foolishness and honesty. There has been many things sent to me in my life but there was only one book was sent to me by a one who to me was the very dearest brother I have ever known which made me very angry. Of course, I read the book anyhow word for word. (The name of the book was "PRIORITY ONE" but I'll not mention the author's name as he was a close friend of this dear brother whose name I also am not mentioning publicly.) Now some would call me backslidden and say I'm just trying to shirk my responsibility and avoid thinking about the burden for lost sinners so as not to let it "get to me" or "burden" me or make me weep and get a spirit of travail and intercession (which by the way I have experienced many times believe it or not and have painfully on my knees borne many to God with tears and many groanings of travailing birth pangs) but I HAVE NO RESPONSIBILITY TO SAVE THE LOST BECAUSE I'M DEAD!!!! You see the law of God may be there and , yes, Jesus said "I did not come to void the law but to fulfill it" so He not only established but raised it to an even higher standard and it has never passed away. BUT I DID !!!!! I died to the law on the cross. One of the heaviest commandments ever held over the heads of poor Christians and made a heavy burden and yoke of bondage too too heavy to bear is The Great Commission. But I died to it, how bout you? I don't let it bother me. You must be saying: "brother! How could you say this? Where would I be today if someone had not witnessed to me?" But hear me out. I believe if we did things GOD's way "according to the pattern shown on the mount" (That's nothing less than Christ!!), then there would be very many more saved today than there are now and they would be much more solid and God's other goal of building us together as His House or Dwelling Place towards being His Bride would also be realized instead of neglected as it is today! Anyway, as I said, the name of the book the brother sent was "Priority



One" and it was about world evangelism. Of course, the one who wrote it was a Bible college professor, had been a missionary etc. and he took a verse from here and a verse from there -- a story from here, a story from there and built his case. I tell you it made me mad!! I tell you this "priority one" concept that evangelism is priority one is WHY the world is still going to hell!!!!!! It contradicted what Jesus said!! The FIRST COMMANDMENT is to love the Lord your God not your neighbor as yourself. Of course you may say that the number one way to do that is to give Him what He commanded and what was first on His heart and that is the great commission, which by the way the writer used to great lengths as to say these were the marching orders Jesus left us with! OK then, brother I challenge you to truly have a closer look at these so called "marching orders" and truly study the original texts in the Greek. If you know Greek and know the original meanings He said: "You shall be going into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature." Go ahead, read it! (in the Original Greek) (By the way for proof of this, see "The New Testament, an Expanded, Translation." by Kenneth S. Wuest) According to Wuest the exact wording was "having gone on your way" (!!!) (NOT "GO"!!) So it was a prophecy!!!! Just think! This was just like a promise! A prophetic utterance of the Lord Jesus Christ! So it was NOT a commandment, it was a promise! Just like our New Covenant God! When the Lord made a covenant promise with Abraham He knocked him out cold so that old Abe didn't stir then the Lord was seen in his dream as passing through the cut in two animal pieces all by Himself!!! No part did flesh play in it. Usually two parties of an agreement pass through but not in God's covenants. So ..... I thought a commission was a charge, an injunction or a commandment? But the Lord's words were : "having gone" in reality. So what is the logical and real conclusion since there was not a command involved? THERE IS NO SUCH THING AS THE GREAT COMMISSION!!!!!!!!!! It doesn't exist!!!!!!!!!! And it never has existed on this planet !!! Now think about it for a minute. Which word is more powerful: a commandment or a promise? Well! A promise, of course!! If the Lord gives us a commandment there may or may not be grace there. We may or may not co-operate with that grace. We may or may not live up to the Lord's command. (NOT!!! we won't live up to it!) BUT if there is a promise -- it will happen and .....IT DID HAPPEN!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! In that generation the gospel was preached and reached all nations of the known world in that generation. And none of this is the point!!!! The point is THOSE WORDS WERE SPOKEN TO 12 MEN!!!! SO EVEN IF YOU CAN PROVE IT WAS A COMMANDMENT IT WAS NOT SPOKEN TO ALL OF GOD'S PEOPLE!!!! IT WAS SPOKEN TO HIS 12 DISCIPLES!!!!!! WHEN we get true God-sent ones (apostles) back again..... WHEN they build the kingdom like they did then, WHEN the same transplant of the fellowship that flows between Father and Son is transplanted into us (See Addendum 4) and we actually live by Christ's very Own life then we will fulfill the same conditions that the 12 did by "being with Jesus" and will be also prime subjects for the fulfillment of the Lord's words: "having gone on your way" And they only evangelized one city for 6 years from the time of Christ's ascension

till the persecution at which time 150 to 200 assemblies came to be within 2 months!!!! BEAT THAT!!!!!! Has anyone beat it??? UH UH!!! No way! So here's another point: Pentecost did not bring in a sweeping in of nations or a worldwide revival or evangelism! It was not the start of a mere soul saving campaign. It led to a building up of the Body of Christ in one city for six whole years!!!! They did not just gather together living stones together to get a collection of souls. They built up (AS and BY divine DNA) God's house. AND THEY DID THIS FOR SIX WHOLE YEARS !!!! What????? Were them guys crazy or something? For goodness sakes! They were disobeying the "Great Commission" and you'll hear preachers say "yeah, God had to send persecution to get them to leave that city and go to somewhere else cause they were disobedient! OK, just try to tell that one to the LORD on the Bema seat judgment day!!! Tell Him " I was doing it right Lord but those 12 who sat at your very feet, well they just didn't get it, did they? I guess they needed more education from a theological cemetery (whoops, excuse me - seminary!) When those six years were done just about ALL of those offspring of our Father had been so conformed to the image of the Firstborn Son that almost all of them became preachers of the gospel and assemblies were born and reproduced right and left all over the place!!!! Hallelujah!!! Praise the Lord!

Now here's another point. When the scripture says concerning those first six years of the New Testament age of grace: "And they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ", it was talking ONLY about those 12 men, not the other Christians!! THAT was true of the majority of the first baby Christians on the face of this planet for the first six years of their Christian life! They just did not spend their time witnessing - it was spent diving into the heavenly riches of Jesus Christ! They were a Bride madly in love with her Bridegroom and dead to everything else! After this they DID preach everywhere because THEY COULD NOT HOLD IT IN!!! AND IT WAS POWERFUL!!

Who can stop the divine DNA, the very seed of the very life of God Himself? But what about us???? Yes ..... I do realize there is some revival going on but where is the dynamite of those of whom it was said "they that have turned the world upside down have come hence?" It has to be nothing less than Jesus Christ Himself to measure up to God's standard. What about us? In 1984 we started some meetings in a home where the brother who lived there had just fallen under the power one night and spoke tongues for 1 1/2 hours without being even told a thing about tongues. Well one particular night his wife shared a dream with us. In the dream she saw a battlefield as a grey expanse and there was a great army of the saints of God who had been given life to stand on their feet. some were normal like for instance some of us in that meeting who she had seen in that dream but most of the others who wore confederate type uniforms and wore hoods so you couldn't see their faces at first, who upon turning to look at her she saw skulls within their hoods. They were skeletons!! She observed some of the conversations taking place among them and the somber serious look upon their face (of the few who had faces) as if the battle were not going well at all but rather there was a great discouragement and downcast pallor upon them as looked out towards a vast battlefield as far as the eye could see. Then in her dream a

big guy who looked like Hoss Cartright from "Bonanza" rode by on a big horse. He was dressed in white and even his huge ten gallon hat was white. He was all white except for (instead of a gun?) his huge Bible he carried in his hand as he gallantly galloped by and hollered out a few words of encouragement. He seemed to be oblivious to the poverty around him because he was so fat. But his bony sheep? Well, the sister did not know what the meaning was but I knew about the scripture where the shepherds had fed themselves instead of the flock. wouldn't you know it --its in Ezekiel ---right next to where the valley of the bones is. It's 3 chapters before ch 37 in 34: 6.

My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yea, my flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth, and none did search or seek after them. 7. Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the Lord; 8. As I live, saith the Lord God, surely because my flock became a prey, and my flock became meat to every beast of the field, because there was no shepherd, neither did my shepherds search for my flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not my flock; Anyway this was that man. He seemed to walk in white and know how to eat spiritual food and was so fat but did not bring others to function as members so they could eat the pasture for themselves. This is not a right shepherd of the sheep! 16. I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick: but I will destroy the fat and the strong; I will feed them with judgment. 17. And as for you, O my flock, thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I judge between cattle and cattle, between the rams and the he goats. 18. Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet?

Do you think the Lord needs this kind of man? He walks in white for his own self but does not have a clue about life and has never fallen in the dirt through a Romans 7 experience and like a grain of wheat died to bear the kind of fruit God wants!! Notice the result: Ezekiel 37: 1.

1. The hand of the Lord was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the Lord, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, 2. And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry. 3. And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? and I answered, O Lord God, thou knowest. 4. Again he said unto me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord.

This scripture came to me as the sister spoke of her dream. As she spoke I broke down and started to weep because I was taken into the Spirit and saw these skeleton faces not as I would see them but as the Originator, the Father with the Father heart of love, compassion and ambition for His own would see them: in a brokenhearted heartsick kind of way and just bled over them again and again as all the sadness of the frustrations of His deepest longings for His Own children just vented out through me. It was as if I were in God's shoes for a time and was being allowed in some small measure to partake in probably a VERY tiny way of the divine nature in so limited a degree. Who knows if we were allowed just a



little bit more into the reality of His heart but that we would die of sorrow  
..... or joy at times.

I sat on that living room floor and put my head in my hands and just wept and wept for 20 minutes or so. didn't care about what those around me thought. As I was weeping Ezekiel 37 was brought to me and was allowed some insight into it. I saw the majority of God's children today are in this condition. What condition? The condition of having life but still being called by God those who are slain. The Lord had said to Ezekiel: "Prophesy upon these bones ..... Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you and ye shall live:" .... now that prophecy goes on but these days even the FIRST PROPHECYING does not seem to go beyond this initial stage of God giving life. Anyway upon Ezekiel's first prophesying the bones came together but the breath entering into the came-together bones went in and passed right through them again cause they did not have the second prophesying. Talk about leaking wineskin, huh!!? The second prophesying was to the wind. Who is the wind? The Holy Spirit, of course. You see, its not enough even to have a ministry that will revive people and cause a shaking and quaking and bones and even sinews and skin to come together but his ministry must also be towards God to cause the Holy Wind to bring a heaven sent storm! We have GOT to have this kind of anointing back today!! Men who have power with God AND man both. Who not only give God to man but give man to God even as Paul did when he said he offered up the nations to God as a priest of the gospel: an offering well accepted to the Lord! Do you know what he was talking about??? I don't believe hardly any one alive today knows!!!

Let's go on. As I sat there weeping inside the heart of our Father there that day there was a clear revelation given me which was later confirmed through Bible study and some life-study messages on Ezekiel by Witness Lee that it was so. Namely this (if you read EZ. 37 you'll see what I mean): that the two prophesyings in that chapter are synonymous with the two scrolls which are also two speakings of the Lord. And that these 2 scrolls became one in Ezekiel's hand before them. The 12 men who sat with Christ had this kind of qualification which is proved in Acts chapter 4 that the Christians were in one accord in one place. This is very significant because God sent a storm of the Holy Spirit just as He did in Acts 2 (check out about the word oneness there too!) when they were in one accord and in one place, the storm and sound of a rushing wind came with a consuming fire to accept the sacrifice. What are these 2 prophesyings that make men one? Christ AND the ecclesia!!! Christ as the Head and ALSO as the Body!!! You got to have and preach both and it ALL has to be done and spoken according to the pattern shown you on the mount and if you haven't spent much time on the mount such as Moses did and Paul did and Timothy at Paul's feet and John the Baptist in the desert etc. etc. etc., then how in the world can you have both prophesyings present under your tongue and get those kind of results? God's kids are divided these days. I shared the testimony of the Revelation of the Lost Keys with you and my object in sharing it with you then was to gain you to my viewpoint concerning one assembly in one locality believing as I did (and yes it is still true -- there is a blessing when people get on this ground of unity) that it would bring you to blessing and YES those who push unity DO get

numbers BUT that is not the greatness of Ezekeil!!! To put unity in the forefront and to push it does not produce much of it but we must preach proclaim and push CHRIST JESUS and Him crucified and that will produce unity and a Windstorm to boot! Paul said "I knew NOTHING in your midst except Jesus Christ and Him crucified." In Ezekiel's story the two prophesyings (being the full gospel of not only the HEAD {Colosians} but the BODY {Ephesians or really II Colosians}) were 2 scrolls one being the 10 tribes the other being the 2 tribes of division of God's people. The 2 scrolls became one in the proper hands. OH!! That God would give us such men again!!!! Such men as this. Those who have the FULL word of God in their mouth. Whose utterance not only shakes nations but brings Holy Storms and Rushing Mighty Wind down from above!!!! WHERE ARE THESE GUYS AT????? LORD WE NEED THEM!! Today's preachers instead try to get you to "accept Jesus in your heart" and then right away try to get you to evangelize the world!

That's what I mentioned in my last message to you about the way the Father sees His children -- as missing in action -- as skeletons facing a lonely battle. When we should be an exceeding great army who makes the enemy to tremble. UNTIL WE HAVE HOLY MEN OF GOD BACK WHO WILL PREACH NOT ONLY THE UNSEARCHABLE RICHES OF CHRIST (where is that today??) AND THE ECCLESIA AS THE ARMY BUT US AS HIS HOUSE BUILT TOGETHER, AS HIS BODY AND AS HIS BRIDE WE WILL NEVER HAVE THIS ARMY AND DEFEAT OUR ENEMY!!!! This I firmly believe: we will never get this as long as we think the Bible is about evangelism 1st and it is 1st priority instead of the development of the Kingdom of God within us of the divine DNA. Until there is living stones built together as God's House and Dwelling place under a true apostolic ministry (and I say this to one and all realizing I will be judged for it if I am wrong) YOU GOT NO BUSINESS GREIVING OUR FATHER'S HEART BY WINNING SOULS WITHOUT THEN BRINGING THEM INTO TRUE ASSEMBLY LIFE!!! No business! It's as wrong as having kids out of wedlock. "But , brother, you are wrong! If we don't win them and get busy doing it they will go to hell." "We need to get out there and get busy winning the lost cause Jesus is coming back and soon it will be too late." These arguments are so lame I can't believe it!!! And excuse me for getting so hot, my dear dear brothers but it all makes me mad! Try to say those things to Paul of Tarsus and tell him to get off his butt cause he's wasting 3 years in an Arabian desert doing nothing but sitting at Jesus feet!!! How bout during the 3 days when he was caught up to Paradise and also caught up to the 3rd heavens! Would you have much of an audience with him then trying to tell Paul he's wasting his time and he ought to go win souls headed to hell and needs to be pulling them from the fire. Then try telling him "Hey Paul, you're doing it wrong, man, you really ought to get into a theological seminary and learn it the proper 20th century mindset way! He wouldn't have time to even listen! Cause

he's not even there! He's somewhere else ("whether in the body or out of the body, I cannot tell, only God knoweth") caught up in an rapturous ecstasy!! If we don't get out of our 20th century mindset a lot more are going to go to hell!!! Through Paul's time spent with God, he became eventually the kind of guy to whom whole cities gathered together to hear the Word of God!!!! The facts of that day and our day still exist: they reached the whole known world with the gospel in their generation. We haven't! And we won't, unless we change. God's newborn children need to be in a situation where they can eat Christ by functioning (being able to prophecy and speak and pray and praise and add their testimony etc. etc.) in the meetings according to I Cor. 14 and learn to dive into the heights, lengths, depths and breadth of the unsearchable riches and experiences of our Savior including the dry prayer and the deserts of that experience and so many other experiences in a well rounded kind of way so they will not be like those skeletons who don't even know what its like to sit with brothers and sisters around our Father's blessed table in His blessed House!! These experiences are meant for us in this age. I have been there!!!





Section IV Increased Light on God's Building and Body:  
Building under the Shadows of Babylon's Great  
Mustard Tree?

Chapter 25

## The Intriguing Cottage

You guessed it! I actually had to live there. Rather than intriguing I'd rather call it enchanting but that word seems to suggest the wrong source. The setting: Charleston, South Carolina, 1984.

Due to grave sickness in my wife's family she flew from Charleston back to Los Angeles. We decided I'd move off the ship to save money. .... 3 months later (due to a problem getting our chosen housing).....I was eating at the ship's mess hall and had a vision. A fellow sailor had just asked me if I did not miss my wife and daughter and I just started crying!! I could see my 1 year (at that time) daughter running circles around me the way she did and laughing, laughing laughing. But I saw through the eyes of God as HE SEES His children as He seemed to be saying to me that His own children were also not at home with Him in His house but were instead at a man made orphanage of today's religion!!! In some measure I tasted Christ's sufferings. Well the poor shipmate across the table from me did not know this! Here I was crying on the mess decks in front of everybody!! So what does he do? He calls his landlady (an old old woman) the next day and tries to get me a place to live! (Isn't that like the Americanized quickie religious setup!! wam, bam, whoooops! The bride ran out the door!) We had put in for low cost housing and were on a waiting list but this guy tells me the old woman has a deal for me now so don't wait. It was a quaint little cottage. It reminded me of a honeymoon love nest.

I had seen a movie I was reminded of about an inn that was enchanted. All the people who stopped there for the night to get out of the rain even if they were about to get a divorce or were cold business associates not at all interested in each other but had to stop because of a storm etc. fell madly in love if they took a room there.

Well this cottage seemed to draw me. It had an quaint old musty odor and it seemed an inward peace drew me from within. (Mistake or no mistake, my decision was based on the inward leading of the Holy Spirit from within) Little did I know I was about to be taken closer to my beloved Bridegroom than ever in my life. For \$185.00 a month I took it.

I visited the cottage, which was in North Charleston on Bexley St. near to what was the Navy Base (which has now been closed and sold), next day with Richard (you've met him already) who decided to meet me there. The power was not yet on. Whoops, I blew it. There was only one bedroom. Oh well, the kid was only 1 year's old and I'd move in a year. After all I was desperate.

There were no lights there that afternoon and the sun was going down as Richard

and I sat on the couch (it was furnished) in the strange peaceful presence of God that just seemed to settle upon this abode. The Lord's presence there was so unusual that both of us had to speak of it. Richard told me " there is something about this cottage, many times, I have driven by here and noticed a strange drawing of God to slow down and look at this place." Now, that's strange, because Richard did not even live near there # 1. # 2. the cottage is way way down a driveway about 100 feet off the street and there is another place in the forefront so it's not that noticeable. Normally a person would never even see it or be able to find it unless he knew exactly where to slow down. And here he would slow down and look at the place and experience the presence of the Lord without even knowing what the real significance of the place was. Eventually the strange peace settled upon us to such an extent that we both sat there upon the sofa in utter silence as the sun was setting. Then he said "I got to go." As he went and the sun descended the peace of God within just increased and increased till I seemed to be caught up into the Lord.

Then at His urging I got up to take a tour (a guided tour!) of the cottage as it was almost utterly dark. By this time I could hardly see. I walked into the kitchen.... Opened the cupboards and.....YIKES!!! I saw movement there. I had never before noticed but cockroaches were in there just scurrying around. Then I turned around to see something jump onto the kitchen table, then back on the wall. I could not make it out till I got closer. It was a chameleon lizard as it changed colors as it changed locations. Suddenly with horror I realized "my wife is not gonna like this too good!" Well, duh!! I sat back down and wondered how I could get out of a year's lease. Then!! As I sat there the whole place began to rock and shake like an earthquake!!! A train shook the place as it went by out back so I opened the back door and.....and.....train tracks were 10 feet away from the back door (not good for little toddlers) ! Oooooops! (of course the meaning of that one was that it was too close to the traffic of this world and as a result, dangerous for the young ones) Man, did I blow it! As I walked around I began to realize that maybe the musty odor was because of dust and that because of a huge oak tree out just to right of the front door with a diameter of about 2 1/2 feet covering the whole abode with its ominous shadow so no light could get through the windows during the day in order to view it for sweeping. I settled down back into the sense of the Lord's presence as it seemed to increase even more. Then a warmth of His love so surrounded me that it seemed to be the only time that such hot tears flowed from my eyes as to almost scald them as they flowed like rivers.

Then it seemed Someone was sitting there. It seemed He had been sitting there waiting for me for 200 years!! He seemed to say " I've been waiting for you" (Of course last weekend before I wrote this I was at a conference with Gene Edwards and he said He's timeless so waiting means for Him: who knows what!) "I had the blueprint for this place made for you long long ago." As I sat back down I really started crying as the Lord's love just poured over me in revelation. I suddenly realized that the sign of light never getting to this cottage through the windows was representative of the big tree our Lord spoke of in Matthew 13 when Jesus with such foresight said "the kingdom of God is like..." He knew what would happen to His kingdom. Now that doesn't mean it's a good thing. Here I

must quote Witness Lee's note from the Recovery Version footnote from Matt. 13:32 (1):

"The church, which is the embodiment of the kingdom, should be like an herb that produces food. However, its nature and function were changed, so that it became a tree, a lodging place for birds. (This is against the law of God's creation, that is, that every plant must be after its kind--Gen. 1:11-12.) This change happened in the first part of the fourth century, when Constantine the Great mixed the church with the world. He brought thousands of false believers into Christianity, making it Christendom, no longer the church. Hence, this third parable corresponds with the third of the seven churches in Rev. 2 and 3, the church in Pergamos (Rev. 2:12-17--see note 12(1) there). The mustard is an annual herb, whereas the tree is a perennial plant. The church, according to its heavenly and spiritual nature, should be like the mustard, sojourning on the earth. But with its nature changed, the church became deeply rooted and settled as a tree in the earth, flourishing with its enterprises as the branches in which many evil persons and things are lodged. This resulted in the formation of the outward organization of the outward appearance of the kingdom of the heavens."

The quaint musty odor of the cottage was from dust in that cottage so what had attracted me as "country" or "quaint" was suddenly a horror to me. I realized that the place was dusty because it was hard to sweep during the day because the dust could not even be seen. Why? Because of the tree!! It shuts out the light and the dirt is not seen. There's something else not seen as Jesus said "the birds of the air lodged in its branches." Today's Christianity has many hidden persons matters and demons that are hidden because of the darkness of those branches or as Witness put it "the enterprises" which are almost all works of the flesh for the most part. Of course you know the tree is the hierarchical system of today's Christendom. This authoritarian chain of command system we inherited from the Romans adds to the darkness shutting out the light of God. These enterprises or "programs" are for the most part fleshly things of Hagar (the hand maid of Abraham by whom he tried by his wife's request and his own flesh to fulfill God's promise of offspring and in so doing didn't hear from God for the next 13 years!!!) and because of the lack of light you can't see the chameleons, dust or fleas or even know that they are there.

The dust (which is what Adam was made of) made for a quaint "country" attractive musty atmosphere which seems attractive to flesh at first but not at all healthy for living. Also the dirt of the old man is not healthy for the breathing of Spirit by the new man. Another factor of the mustiness I suddenly realized at that time was OLDNESS !! The dirtiness and oldness was there (all because of that tree). Then I in horror walked out the front door to view the tree and saw the car I recently built which was a 1975 old yellow station wagon which was breaking down and realized my life was being consumed in oldness and death! Next day I called the landlady. I asked her to spray for cock roaches. She obliged and got somebody over It was then I found out about the poisonous snakes in the woods beyond the tracks and the undesirable elements she said that multiplied in the tree above. Lately I've realized how that she was an old



woman. And why did I get hooked up with a quick fix with this woman? Well because my friend had pity on me. Whom does she represent? The woman in the adjacent parable to the MT. 13 parable of the great tree. The parable of the three measures of meal. What is the three measures of meal? Christ is the meal offering according to the revelation of the scriptures. The leaven is always negative in EVERY other passage of scripture so here also. As Witness said in the above note the Lord in these 2 parables is explaining the outward "appearance" of the kingdom of the heavens and how it shapes because of leaven. What is leaven? Something added to Christ to make Him more palatable or acceptable to the world. The woman represents religious Babylon as she tries to add something of religion to Christ (three measures of meal being the Triune God as our nourishment and life supply for the growth and development of the kingdom of God within. The real kingdom of God is the DNA of God from the seed of God which if Christ had not been incarnated would have never got planted into mankind. What more do we need beyond this wonderful Christ!

One more day after that ..... my two girl friends flew in from L. A. When my wife saw the place, she got mad!! She proclaimed before the whole universe, "I am NOT going to live here!!" And I couldn't blame her.

That day the Lord opened two doors for us: # 1. The old woman let us out of the lease; only she kept the \$ 185. # 2 We went to the low-income housing office where we had our name on the list and they said, "your name just came to the top of the list yesterday!" Praise the Lord! However we could not move in till the 3rd day. We had to endure 3 days of torture!

The first day after some cleanup all the sudden (just like the movie) we were kind of magically attracted to one another , BUT though my bride might have felt strongly attracted to me there she sure didn't want to stay that long! So the bride of Christ may be found in that little building but it is not what the house of God is supposed to be. Isaiah said, "My people are become like a cottage in the wilderness."

The landlady sprayed for the cockroaches for me but when I talked to her about it she said there were also poisonous snakes out in the forest behind the train tracks and there were certain kinds of vermin of other kinds breeding up in the Oak tree above us! Go figure! The second morning (my fourth day there) my daughter Monique had pink little bumps aaaalllllll over her legs from flea bites. I guess the floors were not just dusty they were flea- ridden but you couldn't see them because not much light ever came through the windows. Not much fresh air either. Later that morning my wife opened the back door a huge flying cockroach flew right square into her chest and she started screaming and screaming!!

So ..... What was all that? Point is it happened LONG AGO and I thought I knew what it was and God was trying to get through to me but I could see it

only partially for years and years. The cottage was NOT the tree! The bride could go there but not LIVE there. What was the riddle? Well, I had read brother Gene's books (some of them by that time) but had not figured it out and so I have somewhat wasted much of my life which I regret BUT what was the meaning of that attractive cottage? It, unlike the great tree was a building, and it was communicated to me that it was rare to find building! So what is one of the only things really built with God's life on this earth today BUT still somewhat (although maybe not as much as that cottage because much light poured in to them) under the shadow of the tree? ..... The local church!!!!!!

I had read Gene Edward's epilogue to "Experiencing the Depths of Jesus Christ" by Jeanne Guyon but when he had mentioned a group doing a type of pray-reading and you'll find it a awesome experience but God never meant for you to stay in these shallows God tried to nudge me and get to me but sorry I was so dense. I somehow knew what group he was referring to but not till the eating and drinking of Christ there wasn't enough for me did I realize there is MORE. More than even the local churches had. So. Please excuse these lame revelations but even though I received them under a veil there is something of value and I knew you would appreciate knowing a little bit more about the history of the little flock movement and some of the hidden things which I later discovered in talking to leadership in Hong Kong etc. It's hard to find anything on this earth that is NOT that tree or at least under the shadow of that tree. Gene Edward's work seems to me to be one of the rare exceptions to that rule: at least he is trying to get as far away as possible. THAT, is hard, and that is where I admire his success.

The shadow this great tree casts over all the earth at this present time is ominous. Thank God places like Russia and Eastern Europe were temporarily closed to and cleared away from it temporarily with great cleansing effect. Red China seems to be the place that is freest from its influence and that's probably because of the intercession of Watchman Nee for his his homeland while in solitary confinement. His reward will be great in the next age. There is fruit of approximately 100 million souls born again not to mention a high level of assembly-life experience due to his influence.

God as light shines all the time but the branches of the enterprises of Hagar are a big factor in blocking out the light so that you would even care to clean up or even see to do it. As a result there are many hidden fleas, chameleons and all kinds of undesirable worldly fleshly things of the old creation in the "church" of today and they are not even perceived at all. Yes I know God does a cleansing work but if you don't understand His ways most of that kind of work is in the advanced stages of Christian life and most Christians in this shallow age will never experience such things as long as they live because they do not even know the first thing about the depths of the wonderful unsearchable riches of our Lord Jesus Christ! Most of my readers don't even have the foggiest idea of what I'm talking about.

Two years ago I read one of Witness Lee's messages from Taiwan spoken in 1986 or

so during the implementation of the "system change" from one man speaking the rest listening to all sharing more home meeting etc. and I started to weep and weep as I saw the greatness of this man and the humility inherent: he said that "we are still somewhat under the shadow of the great tree as spoken of in Matt 13 and we have with us still the lukewarmness of Laidocaea and the deadness of Sardis." The message is entitled: "The Building up of the Church Being a Service of Warfare." He said "Sixty years ago, in its beginning, we saw the light through brother Nee that the most important matter in the Lord's recovery is that we would be free from any organized religion. during the past sixty years we have paid much attention to this matter. Still, we admit that although we emphasize this so much, we have never rid ourselves fully of its influence. This is a battle. Because of the entanglement of the power of darkness and the sluggish disposition within us." (!!!!!) Would to God that the majority of the house church leaders today would have the light and humility enough to admit the same thing! He knew that these things were still there despite the awesome blessing of the Lord at that time and he was humble enough to admit it. I could also see he was really struggling with it during that time as most of the message was about prayer warfare as they were really fighting through. I could see he was trying to find a way out of these things and couldn't find the way out. Although he thought he knew what the answer was they STILL haven't found the way out. What a humble brother! If only he had known! He is still the only man who has so successfully changed the system from the old wineskin to the new for a group of Christians and survived! So maybe he didn't have ALL the answers but he did mention the thought, at least, of moving ALL the meetings out of the meeting halls (which some locales actually did) and firing all the elders!! Would to God he had taken that route.

No doubt he accomplished MUCH in this present day and time. One of the most recent books he wrote before he passed away was called "The Divine and Mystical Realm" about how to know this age. In it he says that the light concerning the compound, consummated, life-giving seven-fold Spirit is not realized by today's Christianity. He spoke of the darkness only as far as Christianity is concerned but if you think of it this big tree is the worst enemy of God on all fronts as it clogs up the channel through which He wants to flow and bless the world but because we have more evangelism than ever before we don't see how God-dishonoring we have become as far as testimony and being the salt of the world.

Lately St. John of the Cross (Yes, I am wary of any platonic influence he may have been under) has been of help to me to say that revelation can be completely misinterpreted because of our mindset, background or lack of understanding of God's true intent. Surely this has been my case. Still if something has been tested to be of God it's of God.

You'll probably want to know what happened to the assembly we started in Charleston. Well since I was not a real church planter (I've been called but its doubtful if ever I'll get there I've wasted so much time, who knows) there was much to be desired but I read Gene Edward's book on letting the fire fall so when I left I left with a prayer to that extent and boy did the fire fall. Those



poor people lost their jobs, homes and then all the stops broke loose on them. There was a strong meeting there for years but mostly the result of migration not my work but in 1995 I moved back to that city for 5 months and learned the rest of the history from those there and learned a lot about what was gold, silver and what was stubble and wood etc. It was not purely Christ that I built with so learned the hard way by what came out. At least some people went on with the Lord and the Body got built to a small extent.

It was Gene Edward's ministry and Frank Viola's email correspondence (and his book on the wineskins) that helped me see that the local church still has two classes of Christians and authority structure (though it may be 5% as opposed to Organized Christianity's 95%) and that is a division of two classes (the elders and the other brothers) in their midst making their "claim" of unity void!!! As long as they even think that elders have any authority "over" their brothers there is a division of two classes there. Besides they are not the only group who takes the same stand of "one church one locality" etc. All I've experienced is that because the heart is right in that regard by some of the attendees they experience blessing.

Surely the age is so dark. But ..... Just maybe ..... you can back off from the tree!!!



## Section IV Increasing Light on the Body of Christ

### Chapter 26

THE FOOT WASHED-WASHING JOINT OF SUPPLY - Life flowing through the members of Christ's Body.

This essay was originally a letter written to Gene Edwards as a result of things I passed through over a period of years. I owed it to him as years ago I sent him a letter and a tape challenging him as to why he would start a church in cities where a "local church" already existed and wasn't this something divisive? Isn't it wrong to have two churches in one city? Etc. Anyway my challenge he never answered. Since that time I found out he never really even knew about the letter because he has such piles of mail he was never informed about it. When I met him personally at a conference in Washington State he told me to re-send him the tape "The Revelation of the Lost Keys."

Based on what I knew then I challenged the brother. But now some years later some things have happened (the main story took place in Hong Kong among the little flock movement). These things I not only owed to him as an apology but I KNEW he would take grave interest as he has studied the history and pathways of especially prevailing groups of Christians meeting outside the organized church even from the first century on all his life.

Although he already knew the intrinsic facts concerning Witness Lee and the Living Stream Ministry, he probably wishes I would leave his name out of any mention of the group. But I must be faithful to report what has come to me from the other realm beyond the DOOR and be honest as to how it all came about. These things go along with proven facts that are the real roots that HAVE ALREADY MADE HISTORY. You may choose to not read all this but actually I think you will almost take as much interest in this as Gene will.

Here goes:

### THE FOOT WASHED-WASHING JOINT OF SUPPLY

It all started in 1993 on the USS Jason. This ship was the oldest commissioned naval ship in the Union at that time (50 years old!) and so it wore the yellow snake aft (the "Don't Tread On Me" flag) instead of the normal "Union Jack." But we were on a six month Westpak anyhow as scary as that was on such an old ship. Of the names worthy of mention there are two that stand out as names written in the chronicles of God are two of my ship mates especially: Michael McGrath and James Langfitt. The fellowship in those days for awhile was concerning the real meaning of foot washing. We determined that it was fellowship. sometimes that even means correction. Foot washing is a little hard to give. It is also hard to receive (it depends on you I guess!) That is more especially true for some of us.

I know I'm missing some stuff here but basically we honed in on the fact that

Paul did not hold back his fellowship in ANY wise from his brothers as is stated in Acts 20 concerning the full counsel of God (whatever that is!). He was faithful to reveal anything that was as he said "profitable."

Soon after this we pulled into Japan. I got on a bus and went to the city of Fukuoka where there was a local church (I think you know my definition from reading so far from this book) and was put up by them for a weekend. A brother who had "the gift" was visiting from Tokyo for the weekend to speak to them. Although the translation was very poor and I probably only picked up 1/4 of the meaning of it--it was awesome! He drew a picture of a stick figure on the board and drew a bunch of lines at the left shoulder representing a "cutoff" of the flow from the body to the arm. At this point he referred to Witness' book "The Economy of God" talking something about how fellowship had to flow through the Body by giving AND receiving both. If the member (a collar bone? Maybe a neck?) on the body side of the shoulder does not share what he has to the arm this will make a clog. Also if the arm side does not receive what is flowing from the other side a clog is produced!! Whoa! Then he put a Chinese character (Japanese and Chinese characters are very much alike and mutually understood) on the board. It had a line drawn underneath it. The character looked weird to me but it meant "flow" or "fellowship" and when you put something like a wall and a roof over it that changes the meaning of the word to clog (clotting, impediment, coagulation, damper, or smokescreen ect. ect.) or sickness.

The flow brings healing and life! The lack of a flow means sickness and death. Hey! I never knew blood flow was so important to life: spiritual as well as physical. Then he spoke how that if someone withholds fellowship from the member on the other side of the shoulder it could cause the hand to not receive and the hand could die without even knowing what was happening!! Ouch!!!!!! Or you wish it could be ouch but there's no pain when death arrives because of a cessation of feeling. there is not even a knowledge of what happened. Man! Now this was too much heaviness!! And it did not even have to be the hand's fault! And there's a dead hand! At this point through tough translation I shared about our findings on footwashing and how it was hard to give and receive and forwarded that into Paul's words in Acts 20 " And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have showed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house," What an example of a joint of supply!

Next stop: Hong Kong. There was an existing division of the local church there. The negative, rebellious group who had somewhat not agreed with brother Lee's "new way" etc. were seemingly represented as divisive and so there was another group of about 500 who broke off. The brothers from the first group (especially the leaders there) refused fellowship (there's that clog at the shoulder again!) and as a result the 1000 saints that met with them were reported as being dead. And yes there was death somewhat. The 500 were so much for wanting to be reconciled with the 1000 that they were not even breaking bread the morning I took a brother named Frank off the ship to the meeting. They believed there should only be one table in the city, so they did not even hold what some know as communion. AS a result what a flowing of living waters in that meeting! The whole meeting it was all I could do (for the sake of the brother who was with



me)to keep from throwing myself on the floor and balling my eyes out! For the whole meeting! Surely at least I was in the flow of life that day! (The brother I brought felt the same way)

During those 5 days I visited the meeting hall of those on the negative side. I asked to speak to the "elders" but got a cold shoulder seemingly and they said those guys were too busy to talk to me. Again I thought of the shoulder. I thought of 1000 dead people as a result of these "joints" refusing to receive fellowship from those who were one with Bro. Lee (of course we all thought that the flow on earth started with that brother). I thought what a shame it was that there had to be all that death.

(by the way, this is a story about a little pin, popping a big balloon, you will get what I mean later!).

Now it gets heavy! Check this out! I got on the liberty junk boat to go back to the ship mid-afternoon (as the ship was anchored out). It was raining almost constantly and profusely those days and the ladder from the second deck was quite slippery. As I came down the ladder I lost footing completely and reached up to grab the bar above to keep from getting killed. Falling unevenly I pulled a ligament in my left shoulder and ouch!

Next day the doctor says if I'd been working out I would not have hurt the ligament. So I ask him to give me a light duty chit to get my work routine eased up as I felt obvious pain. "Nope!", he said, "You not only need to work that arm you need to start going to the gym and work out!" Again I hear Someone trying to say something to me!

About this time we started a practise of washing one another's feet (literally, pee-ew!). I don't think any of us had a sacerdotal concept that any grace was communicated through such practices but we prayed for and shared with one another and got the feeling that sometimes there's some fellowship hard to receive and also hard to give but we need to know that we must do it. The significance of my hurt shoulder was that I needed to exercise it even though it was not perfect and all of us need to function even though we may not be perfect, even though we just had a besetting sin harass us ,ect. ect. If there's pain in that joint of supply all the more reason to exercise it even more and get more blood flowing through it! That will cause it to heal even faster though there may be a little added pain.

I developed soon after a condition on my right shoulder blade of an itch that bugged the heck out of me day after day! The only way ot reach it was with my left arm which could not quite reach it cause of the pulled ligament! So I had to use a pencil or ruler or some manufactured invention of man to meet that particular need of my body cause the member who was supposed to meet it was indisposed!! Hey the lesson is obvious. It was in my face day after day after day! What does it remind you of? Today's Christianity and all its inventions to take the place of the Body of Christ and the normal functions of life! There are

so many out there offering you a fast so-called cure for all your problems. They never stop to think its such a man centered gospel with only the need of man in mind not the needs of God AND man. The itch went on for two months! (the Lord said "hello! smell the coffee!!") I had to continue to use a fabricated counterfeit till my right arm through constant reaching finally developed the ability to actually kind of reach that part of my right shoulder blade! So my body came through! To the rescue. But during those 2 months was I gonna wait for that? No way! There's a price to pay for waiting for the growth of life to do the job! It's so much easier to go with the fabricated programs people have today! How hard it is to wait on the Lord and to wait for the growth of life! To meet the real needs according to HIS ways in these days is difficult!

Now I got to back track. Soon after our eventful trip to Hong Kong we went to Singapore. Same problem with the local church there. 700 negative ones refusing fellowship with Witness Lee. 400 positive ones. What I couldn't get was how come they thought they could be in the flow of life and not receive from this brother? How come they would fellowship with everyone else and listen to others but not Witness Lee? Did the Body of Christ consist of all brothers and sisters in the churches except Witness Lee? Hey! He's a brother and fellow member too! Sounds like they are cutting themselves off, huh? No matter what the fellowship from a fellow member we got to chew the meat and throw out the bones. EVERY chicken has bones.

So I went to the negative and positive sides of the fence in Singapore to see what I could see or do what I could do. When I asked to speak to the "elders" of the negative side they gave me a run around and said they were too busy and set me up to spend the day with a guy I found out later the positive side said he was the most damaging and dividing person of the whole lot! Those on the positive side told me that when the 700 divided they felt right and totally justified in what they were doing and had no sense that they were damaging the Body of Christ whatsoever. But those on the positive side said they were hurting so bad and were in such pain they could hardly breath: couldn't hardly pray during that time or read the Word or function properly. To my mind it seemed to make perfect sense.

Once again I thought about the shoulder. If the life is alive but the arm gets cut off, the life side is going to be a hurting mess! The dead side ain't gonna feel too bad. There's no feeling at all!

After that we went to Saudi Arabia and for some reason I had a personal landslide. It took years of reading Gene Edward's writings and many of his tapes and gradually coming to see that there was something wrong with the way I thought (not with the Lord or what He reveals.).

Years later in 1997 after being transferred to a ship (U.S.S. Frank Cable) out of Guam we came to Hong Kong again. In some ways I still had a big head cause the Lord had shown me quite some revelations. According to what people in the local church had said the "rebellion" of the late 80's, early 90's was principally the fault of one Joseph Fung who resides in Hong Kong and who was never there whenever I had pulled in in times past. Or, as I thought was maybe someone scared or unwilling to talk to me (some brothers back in the states having heard

about my reception by the negative side in Singapore said "they probably thought you were a spy from Anaheim!!" Anaheim is where the Living Stream ministry has its roots.). Anyhow, Joseph Fung was one of the people considered a rebel and sure he probably had faults but little did I know what I was about to learn. (The other brothers who had been quarantined as being ring leaders in the so-called rebellion were Bill Malon, John Ingles and John So: come to find out later they did have honest concerns about truth and things that just didn't set well with their spirit within that's all)To my surprise brother Joseph Fung (quite an old man by now) was more than willing to fellowship with me. (First blow!!) Well here I was ready to share my great revelation concerning the shoulder and my slide on the boat in Hong Kong ect. ect. and straighten this brother out Oh! great man of God that I was! NOT!!!! Now here's the little pin that popped my balloon (he had no intention of course)!

He was sad about the fact that many had divided over the fact that some were not one with brother Lee concerning the new way.

Well THEN he tells me that brother Witness visited him one day and asked him "Do you absolutely submit yourself to me?" POP!!!! Oh, Oh!! I never heard this!

O.K. throw out everything I said before !!!!! !!!!!!!!!!!!!!! I think you know what I mean. I received it with the wrong mindset. Thinking that the Body of Christ was only the local churches who were under the teaching of brother Lee! What blindness! It doesn't matter WHAT the Lord was revealing to me or how awesome. If it comes to a mind that is biased it is off---waaaaaaaaaayyyyyyy off. So, I believe brother Gene Edwards was probably one of the few people that can receive the aforementioned things in the right context.

But you see how the Lord let me down easy. Brother Fung went on to tell me what most of us know ,come on: that he had to tell Witness that there was only one Person in the whole universe to Whom he felt he should absolutely submit himself and its not Witness Lee no matter how anointed and fruitful that brother is! Eventually I learned why the very ones who claim to be standing on the local ground of oneness are not really on that ground! Why? Because they still got the division of the clergy and laity in their own midst though they preach against the idea of such a thing!!

There is a division of two classes! Oh Oh! It was Frank Viola and his books and some of my e-mail correspondence with him that helped me to see that even with a group that stands for one Body there can be this 2 class division within. So where is their claim of standing on the ground of oneness? There are still 2 classes.

Of the writings of Gene Edwards and Frank Viola helped me alot more to see how we can(by church planters LEAVING w/no leadership for awhile ect.)escape that system--and its not easy. But I think you can see from what I just shared with you who was the real source of the division in Hong Kong (so which side WAS on the "oneness"? I saw it was something different in each man's heart in accordance with light each one had)? Witness Lee? Well, kind of, but really I think it was the authority paradigm he got from Watchman Nee who got it from the



brethren. So I left the movement and tried to get in fellowship those who who actually have the same qualifications as the twelve who spent 20,000 hours in the direct presence of our Lord had. For one of the most important understanding of this reality see my article in Addendum 4.) Brother Gene Edwards and the men he is training are such individuals who spend this much time. and when they raise other believers up they don't appoint leaders and give those leaders all the speaking, but like Paul in Acts 14 they left them after teaching them and bringing them into a reality of experiencing Christ, without leadership or even writings or hymn books but only with and experience of Christ to all speak that Living One to one another thus really building up the Organism of GOD. Those men LEFT!!! They left! They didn't stay to pastor the next 20 years. Do you hear? THEY LEFT!



## ADDENDUM 1 - Revivals in Acts - Resurrection of the Dead

### Revivals in the Acts of the Apostles

So just what was the attitude of the apostles towards revival? I doubt if you ever thought of this because you may think that the book of Acts was one big constant revival. Actually, I doubt if they had much of any kind of attitude towards revival! Why would I say this? Easy! Revival just did not have much of anything to do with the first century reality! **THEY NEVER EVEN MENTIONED THE WORD REVIVAL!!!** (boy.. those guys were in outer space, huh!) maybe they didn't even think like we do **BECAUSE THEIR SURROUNDINGS AND CIRCUMSTANCES WERE DIFFERENT.**

Here we have to face the New Testament and admit the fact: the word revival is not even mentioned the whole New Testament! Not even once! How strange! Or should we take special note of it? The truth is the first century Christians did not **NEED** revival because they were so alive!!! They turned the world upside down! Revival is for those who are dying on the vine and they know it and are humble enough and realistic enough to admit it!

Now let's get one thing straight before I go on with this seemingly nonsensical, ethereal, daydreaming and unrealistic talk: I am in no sense of the word against revivals. We need them desperately today! In fact God put me in a corner for about 2 years of my life and taught me the principles of revival and how to bring them into existence. There is a science to it. They **ARE** real and not so mysterious as you think! And its only halfway up to the sovereign arrangements of God -- the other half is up to you and me!

So why would the New Testament omit the word revival from its pages? Didn't God know we would need it desperately in this age and knowing this give us principles towards its realization? OK, I guess you forgot what the New Testament is about. It is a covenant between God and man with many bequests and bequests are things already given to us which used to be promises but are now ours for the taking due to the blood of Christ! Half the time we don't know what we have or how to partake of it so we live in spiritual poverty! Part of these bequests of the reality of Christ's unsearchable riches that are ours is the history of the results and consequences of the acts of the sent ones who had a proper understanding and standing in those realities because of their personal walk and knowledge of Jesus **HAVING BEEN WITH JESUS PERSONALLY!** The results: **A PEOPLE THAT NEEDED NOT SUCH A THING AS REVIVAL BECAUSE REVIVAL MEANS TO RAISE UP SOMETHING DEAD AND THEY WERE NOT DEAD!** They were not only living but they were thriving in the abundant life! Now there was such a thing mentioned by Peter as an outpouring of the Spirit but you don't have to be dead to receive this! It's even better if you're alive! It is true that these "times of refreshing from the

presence of the Lord" as Peter called it in Acts 2 is a very special time that is and can be brought about only by the sovereign arrangement of God, but there IS something YOU can do to make yourself more receptive and advantaged by such an outpouring if and when you are there for such an event.

A certain brother from a traditional Pentecostal church told me once: "brother! You should come to our revival! This evangelist is working all kind of miracles and the power of God is moving, people are getting saved and lives being changed." Well ... at least he said that in so many words. One brother even told me the visiting missionary had raised the dead! This is my reply: " OK, thank God for everything the Holy Spirit does in the midst of His people. But hear my supposition: let's say for example my daughter gets sick so I get more and more heart sick over her and finally call you brothers over to pray for her. But you get to my house too late! She already died while you were on your way over, so I'm just sitting in my living room a crying broken mess when you arrive but you say "have faith in God brother. Lets pray for her any how. So we pray and the Lord really shakes our hearts and faith comes alive and God resurrects her from the dead!!!

Next thing that happens after that is you see me running around the block at least three times shouting at the top of my lungs "HALLELUJAH!!!!!!!!!!!! THE LORD GOD OF HOSTS JUST RAISED MY LITTLE GIRL FROM THE DEAD!!! HALLELUJAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! and boy do I get the neighborhood stirred up! Praise the Lord! Next thing you know there is an evangelistic outpouring of the Spirit in my neighborhood because the Lord sees an opportunity to work there and people are getting saved and rededicated to God right and left! Praise the Lord! This is all just fantastic!

OK ... three weeks passed by and my daughter gets sick again. This time death comes so swift I really get desperate before God and wonder how this can happen. So I call you brothers again and you come over again and we pray again and she gets resurrected from the dead again and Hallelujah! Praise the Lord! BUT ... its not as good as the first time! And it leaves a question in my mind as to what is really going on here.

Another two months pass ... my daughter dies again! So I call you brothers over again and you pray again and ... HELLO!!!!!! THIS is beginning to get old! I'm tired of having to go through seeing my daughter die over and over again!!! Hey!!! GUESS WHAT BROTHER!! I DON'T EVEN WANT TO SEE HER DIE THE FIRST TIME!!! I want her to sit at my table in good health and eat my food and grow every day and be happy and normal and grow up to be all God has for her to be!!!!!!!! AND THAT'S WHAT GOD WANTS FOR US!!!!!!

Good night, I'm hitting on our REAL problem and you probably don't even notice what I'm doing! We don't think like the first century Christians thought and that's what this appendix and the next appendix is about. Revival is a wonderful thing but if people knew what real Ecclesia community life in the bosom of our Father was all about and learned what it means to eat a little bit of Christ (or a lot) each day they would grow and not be so impressed by the great fantastical sensationalism that today's poor poor low empty useless (what other terms can I



use - it seems endless! Oh yeah, an old leaking wineskin)

So what's my point? Point is that there are many traditions and practices of today's formal, stainless steel, unchanging, inflexible and ritualistic practices that make for even the slightest leaks in the container or temple which Paul said we are and even if there is a small leak the wine is going to run out.

To close this article I have chosen to refer you to another brothers article concerning quite some enlightening information on the spiritual state of Wales today particularly in the area where most people agree the greatest revival of the whole 20th century took place. What's left? I do not know the exact particulars that the writer thought was the demise of the revival and the leaking of the wineskin but I believe the old traditional wineskin had something to do with it. Of course /I still do believe that when God starts cleanup He starts at the heart. He starts within. you'll find the excerpt on "Lessons From The Welsh Revival For Today" at <http://www.robibrad.demon.co.uk/Revival.htm/> or please click on the link below:

### ***Lessons From The Welsh Revival For Today***

With the numbers who were converted in the 1904 revival dwindling and the tide of modernism influencing Wales in the first half of the 20th century true Christianity was on the ebb all through those years. The social gospel prevailed, that is, the churches exerted what influence they had to get Caesar to make new laws and tax people (on the threat of imprisonment if they refused) and distribute wealth, and spend the money on state education, state ownership of businesses, and medical care, etc. all run by unbelievers. That was the social gospel. Many say that this is what killed vital Christianity in Wales last century and is responsible for the fact that by the end of the 20th sad century one church was closing each week. But I think we need to look deeper. All these influences combined in double the strength that they happened could not really kill the resurrection life of Jesus! How could it? I think rather it was a leaking wineskin that could not possibly hold such an outpouring much less even a moderate visitation of the Spirit. "Having begun in the spirit, are ye made perfect by the flesh?" Gal. 3:3. For some desperately needed insight into our real problem, which is our present day mindset and where we got it from, please see Addendum 2.

ADDENDUM 2 Our Western Mindset - THE MATRIX of Christianity today  
II. Today's Christianity's Off-Centered Mindset and Ways

ADDENDUM 2

Our Western Mindset

So, just what IS the Matrix Reloaded from the Christian standpoint today? IS there "The Matrix" for the true Christian in this world? Yes! I believe so! I believe very much so that there is a religious womb-like mindset that has surrounded today's believers and for the most part, the majority of us are blinded by it. I have never written these things actually down like this before. Has anyone? I don't know, but let me say quickly that this is not original. These facts I gleaned from one of Gene Edwards messages in the 19 video tape series on a Revelation of Christ before Creation and then I added my own thoughts and experiences. Will this help you in your present times and circumstances? I don't know because I don't know what all you might be going through but that would not be the main point of what I'm sharing anyway, would it? If there was not so much confusion on how the "church" should be or be done there would not be so many different "ways" would there be? I think I wrote before that the real and only pattern for building in the NT is a Person, the Lord Jesus Himself. But that is not clear to us because then our mind can't comprehend because its not good enough to know the "book" you have to know Christ and that takes some time first.

Well there are a couple of things before I dive into how we got our Western mindset that are important. 1st, Early Saints had an illiteracy rate of 95% among the Jews and even worse among the Gentiles: 98%! They did not bring their Bibles to "church" with them! (if they had they would have had to employ a wheel barrow because of the actual size of the scrolls in those days!!) There were no Bibles as we know them. Maybe there was in most cases one copy of OT scriptures in synagogues. Secondly, what we do today is totally different than what they did then and how we justify our present practices and say we are doing things according to the Word is the most amazing miracle that's .... well .... simply NOT! Vice-versa.

The last things written in the chapter on "footwashing" was about apostles LEAVING. THAT'S what Jesus did!! He LEFT! He left them on their own. Eventually that's what Paul did when he raised up an assembly. IT'S PART OF THE WAYS OF GOD. We say we follow the Lamb. But can we give so much of Christ that we can with confidence walk out on a people without leaving them with ANY elders, preachers, buildings, Sunday Schools or Bible??? Who has THAT kind of powerful gospel today? And you got to do it all in four months and walk out on them and not see them again for two whole years!!!! When you go back IF there's someone (someone at all???) mature enough to "ordain" as an elder then maybe you can.





bunch of rules, (by the way the poor sisters in that assembly were very upset and taken away from Christ by the whole thing, not brought towards Him) something Paul told Timothy was for conversion of a bunch of sinners (see Tim 1) not for saints of God. Or from God .... or IN God!

A brother named Steve Bender and I went to "the oldest church in America" (it was in historic downtown and it was Episcopalian ) for a visit one Sunday in downtown Charleston, South Carolina. There were two pillars with winding stair cases inside them up front on both sides. Actually the one from which the sermon was preached was in the middle. Before the sermon on one side the ... who ever ..... went up ( way up ) above the congregation into one of them to read the scripture verses then later the preacher with a backward collar and long choir robe went to the other later on to give the sermon. This started with the pagan Greek orators of the past. They would go to a lectern on one side of the room to read their text from Homer or Aristotle or whomever and then go to another lectern and spellbind those people. I heard there was a little boy once that when he saw this old somber white haired man go so high up into that pillar where the pulpit was he asked his mom in awe "mommy, is that God???" Well to us its kind of cute and funny but can't we see there's an obvious problem??? Of course! Why is this guy above his brethren? Hey! Even if you get on a platform one inch above your brothers it's still wrong! Whether a man steals 10K from a bank or an apple from an old lady, it's still stealing. What happened here????? A guy.....enter one: Chrystotem ..... named Chrystotem ( meaning golden mouth ) got saved in the fourth century and brought his "talent" into the "church" ... huh? He was a Greek Orator. (who, by the way were soaked in the Greek philosophy of Aristotle, Plato and Socrates ) They were "IT" in those days like the movie stars in our day. People went to hear them speak to be entertained. THEY performed the first funerals etc. Well, they would have a ambo (our pulpit or lectern today came from the ambo) and they would take a text from Homer or what ever writing and read from it saying just like this real loud: "I'm reading from Homer chapter so and so, verse so and so (or maybe another would read it) and then he would "orate" from that text and literally spell bind those people for an hour with the homiletic "art" of rhetoric and oratory. **THIS IS WHERE WE GOT OUR MODERN DAY SERMON!** It's not what Paul did when he went all night. The Greek word for what he did WITH those believers is translated discourse. A discourse is back and forth conversation at least somewhat. And it wasn't a performed ritual. Back in that 4th century time their poetic works were divided into chapter and verse for the sake of the orators who would use the writings to do their orations or debates. Guess how our Bible got that way? You got it!! The Greek Orators. Who originated this? The Greek Philosophers starting with Aristotle and Plato etc etc. started this whole oratory thing. It is something of the world not God. So this is how Satan got the knowledge tree into the faith!! Not so fast! (And **THAT'S MY MAIN POINT: NOT SO FAST: SATAN KNOWS HE'S GOT TIME TO WORK WITH :MAYBE CENTURIES SO HE DOES A LITTLE HERE AND THERE A LITTLE MORE THERE AND HERE**

AND HE'S GOT MOST OF US DUPED!!! DUPED SOLID AS A ROCK!!!

If you put a frog on a pan of heat, he'll jump off. If you try to put him in a boiling pot, he'll jump out, but if you put a frog on a board and put it over gradual heat, he'll become accustomed to it and get warmed up, then sluggish and finally numbed with his senses deadened and soon HIM dead! So..... not so fast..... There were many prerequisites to pave the way for this development. There were four centuries before this and it was bit by bit by bit by bit by bit by well I think you get the idea---it was Satan's idea and he still got most of us saints of God duped today as to what he's done throughout the centuries. Good night man, I got enough problems today than to think about all this, you know what I mean? And the enemy is sure to keep people occupied with their problems instead of finding out the truth. He HATES guys like me who can pull the sheets off his centuries and centuries "buildup operation!!" So why am I or most of us going to be concerned about the centuries. It's only when it pertains to your life that you'll be likely to care. Most of us don't even care about our neighbor (Hmmm, I wonder why? Was it different when assembly was house to house?) much less the generations to come or what the generations of the past did to help us or hurt us. BUT, our lives have been PROFOUNDLY INFLUENCED by past generations!

So ..... what has all this addicting ( and since you add the anointed Word of God to oratory BOY!! Is it ever addicting! ) sermonizing done for us? Well it encouraged us that we can do it! So we think "we can serve God" ( cough!! cough!!! ) we just know we can do it! Oooops! Wrong tree! There's that independence again. But wait!! When was it again? It was Before Christ. We have a "western mindset" its our matrix. In other words the channel of birth with which we are surrounded in coming into life is a good definition of "matrix." Our surrounding thought process or matrix we are literally saturated with (this thought process or surrounding lifestyle etc. is what is meant by "mindset") by the way is profoundly influenced by superstition, philosophy and witchcraft! Big time! How to get away from it? Have your kids be born in the hills of China somewhere where they grow up with an "Eastern" mindset! By the way Christianity is NOT a Western religion it is EASTERN!! Like it or not that's where it originated. In the East is where Christ was born, like it or not. So what happened before Christ? Hold on to your seat. Before Christ in Greece there were two schools of thought fighting for supremacy ( survival of the fittest, you know ). One was the "Pythagorean School" , the other was the "Ionian School" of thought. The Pythagorean was "thinking thinking thinking" (like today's Christianity: if I hear enough sermons, read enough books and think, meditate etc. etc. enough THEN I'll figure out how to be a good Christian! But it does not work! Why? NONE of this will EVER change our "be," our very being; only spiritual transformation INSIDE will change you!) and that all problems were basically mathematical and could be solved by formulas or analyzation and even men thought you could use chemistry and if you get the right formula you could even turn lead to gold!! Well THAT theory died with the atomic bomb of course! But this IS where the roots of modern day chemistry DID start so there is some

validity to it. Anyway it started out a little more scientific but then it shifted and became "learn to think" NOT experiment. In other words you might as well shut your eyes, go in a closet and learn to think and you do that enough you can solve anything! On the other hand the Ionian school was based on hands on experimentation and this is where we get our word "IMPERICAL," or the practical hands on experimentation. THIS is one of the saddest saddest facts of ALL the history of the world that has happened but it is a very little known fact. I'll bet you never heard this in Bible school or any school. So what's the fact? That the Pythagorean school of Platonic philosophy won out over the Ionian school. This is a BIG tragedy. How big? Dark Dark Ages, buddy. THAT'S where the Dark Ages came from. Of course this had already taken course even before our Lord was born on this planet and before the dark ages set in. EXAMPLE: During those dark ages they made it against the law to cut open a human body. You couldn't experiment! BUT that's the scriptural way of operating on people: to cut them open! You'd have been burned at the stake for it! Only if someone had an accident and bled could they even find out which way the blood flowed in the human body! Great advance for science!! C"MON GUYS!!!!!!!!!! Give us a break here!!! So, instead of advancing, men were ever learning and never coming to the knowledge of the truth just as Paul had said and had prophesied that it would be so and they Philosophized and philosophized and got these profound thoughts and exchanged God for bugs (grrreat intelligence! Whoa! Horse! Where's it going???) and idols also and by the way ---- you can even do this with scripture .....

wind it up baby!! You can get into the word so big time with so much study and theology until you get into this kind of a high and it is not the human spirit contacting the living God in the Word but it is the mind!! Well those guys in Plato's days got into such a high they got conceited but it was not contact with God. But because you could not experiment science died. THAT's why science is now the enemy of religion (!!!!!!!!!!! WOW!!!!!!!!!!!!) because back then if you question the "thinkers" which by this middle aged Catholic time were mostly "the church" and this philosophy held sway for a thousand years till even now today Eastern Europe's economy is STILL suffering as a result!! The Western world suffered INTENSELY because of this. By the way, how does the world rotate around the sun or is it vice versa? You can take 2 sticks and experiment with them and figure it out! It's that easy!! But poor Gallileo: (who proposed that the earth actually went around the sun instead of vice versa) MAN did they ever persecute that poor guy! CONSIDER THIS FACT: If the Ionian school had won out over the Pythagorean, we would have had a man on the moon by 600 A. D. and cars on major highways way back then!!!!!! That's right! How can this be proven? Because 600 years ago the 2 Bacons: Francis Bacon and Robert Bacon brought the practical and empirical back to our world again and things have been clicking ever since!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Hey! Now we can write on e-mail! Do you think God knew about that when He created earth?? Sure He did! But we poor humans have only known about electricity less than what? Only 200 years? What other realities exist in our universe that we have not yet discovered? I don't know. But I would think we should have discovered them long before we did. So these Bacons re-introduced the Ionian way of doing things and took things apart put them back together. And



from that day to the day Neil Anderson stepped on the moon was 600 years!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! WE SHOULD HAVE HAD A MAN ON THE MOON IN 600 A. D. !!!!!!!!!! WHO DID THIS TERRIBLE THING TO US???? 1st: Socrates, 2nd: Plato his student: 3rd: Aristotle, Plato's favorite student. They taught an introduction a main point and a conclusion after that and figure out, figure out, and then figure out. School taught you this! The church took this over. They still teach you this by the way things are done!!!! Constantine of course helped with that because he made the church the political favorite and married the Christians to the world system. He did another thing too. He invented Theology!! That's right! When there were problems in beliefs between Christians it was he who brought together opposing doctrinal sides together in an attempt to unite believers under what he invented that day : a Creed!!! Good night, wasn't the Bible enough of a creed for our beliefs. What was the result of his effort to unite the believers? Theology! What was the result of theology? Nothing has caused more division in the Body of Christ than trying to systematize doctrines together and taking a verse from here and a verse from there to do it!! When you have to read a book or a letter of Paul in its historical context without chapters and verses (they should be done away with!! Of course here's another thing: the devil waited only about a hundred and sixty two years (actually in 462 by Euthalius who divided it into lines but as yet they were not numbered. Numbering of the "stichoi" or lines did not occur till 1560 in Geneva: however alphabetical letters were used or other punctuation type markings.) on that one after Constantine and he got chapters and verses into holy writ!! Yes! I said the devil!!! He's the culprit that did this! And with far more intelligence and superior thought and scheming than YOU got or even dreamed of having cause HE'S smarter than you!!! But not wiser.) These horrible people (Aristotle and clan mentioned above) stole the ability to be practical from us!!!! From US! As a result the empire fell. There was no exchange of ideas. Trade stopped as a result of the lack of travel. Thieves took over the roads and there was not much transportation except the monks because the thieves were afraid of hurting monks because superstition reigned over their minds. The R.C.C. ruled! Commerce stopped, travel stopped, money flow stopped, fresh ideas stopped, trade stopped. Things got dark dark dark and the only real business much had to do with monasteries or certain associated governments----- these dark ages lasted 1000 years! And you thought this "Ionian-Pythagorean" thing had nothing to do with your life!!! Have we been hurt? You bet! The Catholic Church writers inseminated the neo-platonic writings into their theology. Ever hear of Thomas Aquinas? They say he baptized Aristotle. That's because in his spiritual writings he included the big "A" 's ideas into his theology. So did St. Augustine. Other names were Tertullian, Origen etc. but those names are not as important. Today Eastern European countries are still in poverty because of the influence of the dark ages. The worst damage was on the deep things of God. The philosophical ideas so inseminated themselves into the ideas of those who were truly deep in Christ that later on their ideas were rejected altogether which has caused a great loss. And this was one reason why Martin Luther rejected

contemplative prayer and so did Calvin. By the way even though Luther restored just a few things of the New Testament that had been previously lost, remember that even he was a student of Augustine! THAT's why he put the NT books in the order he did!! (thinking as he did that doctrine is the most important thing in Christian life. What happened to JESUS being ALL in ALL!!) HE made up the order of the list of our books! And we followed it ever since cause THAT's gospel, man! NOT!!! It's just not so! Martin Luther is not my God. By the way, brother, Martin had just 1% of the education you have got! You see ? This was not just lightly pawned off on us ---it took years of developments, slow and easy. The enemy would make a move, wait a century or so and make another move, etc. : What a sly dog !!!! I mean this has been dirty dirty play throwing out the rules as if he ever had any. He thinks he's so slick! The problem is he IS slick! The only restriction on this guy is what the Almighty Himself imposes on him. The creep in this case used the Bible itself to bring the death tree that is already within man to the forefront and to put veils upon our minds to separate us from God and one another. He couldn't succeed at destroying the Word so he did his best to make it so mysterious through being out of context and in the wrong order (not to mention we are not in the condition of real Body life which would put us in a position to understand by experience what the New Testament was so obviously expressing) we can hardly get at it in its real meaning. And then we just accept things as they are without questioning it. So how has this affected us? We try to find a set answer in the Bible for everything instead of turning to God for a fresh Word from Him. Of course we need to test that experience by the Word BUT how do you do that IF YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND IT TO BEGIN WITH??

Oooops! We got a bigger problem. We geniuses (I'm not casting blame on Christians today. Most do not know any better) think that we DO understand the Bible!! O. K. so besides what happened through Martin Luther (so IS there an advantage of being more educated today than Martin Luther? Maybe. It could do us even more harm if we blindly accept his ways!! But if you get educated about the real facts as I'm presenting here ..... hmmm , who knows?) what has been the damage of dividing the Bible into chapters and verses? This is easy to see. Anyone can take a verse from here, a verse from there as proof texts from different parts of the Bible. ( The computer makes it even more easy!! ) In this way you can prove anything. So? ..... the multiplication of cults is the result. and they all got their proof texts not to mention the dividing doctrines of the denominations. The damages have been endless. So now here we are in the year 2000. The new creation species from another planet have been in this world for two millenniums! Here's a question: What has this havoc wrought for us in the last 100 years? Well, in what year did D.L. Moody die? ( I know you really think and believe he's got nothing to do with your life ) In 1901. What about Charles Spurgeon? He also died in 1901. Because of what these 2 men did to us this has been the century where nothing has happened. Got to go back in history to explain. 1st I'll take a minute to say what the roots of the Protestant (of course there are many more Catholic traditional roots than Protestant but consider some of the Protestant traditions are Catholic crossovers so

Protestants retain Catholic entities) traditions are:

1. Pulpits -- called an ambo from pagan idol worship temples and Greek orator ancient theaters.

2. Church buildings -- the invention of Constantine in 324 A. D. There is no Archeological proof before THAT date -- they do not come from Jewish synagogues!! On the other hand Archeology DOES prove there were homes that believers met in before that date and also proves there were no such buildings before that Emperor. The Catholics according to their concepts and prejudices wrote the lies about so-called church history. (whether intentional or not) The archives of these documents are buried in the catacomb vaults of the Vatican with no proof other than those original writings!! (which were invented after 324).

3. Pastors -- no one was called a pastor until after Martin Luther invented the "Protestant Priest" (which was a crossover from the Catholic Church and changed the 7 pastoral duties of the clergy or "Protestant Priest" as started by Pope Gregory (who was superstitious it was spooky!) the great as duties for Catholic priests. Martin Luther changed the 7 pastoral duties. One that he changed was the preaching of sermons.

4. Pews -- an invention of the Reformation -- just a long chair, but hey!...how boring! If it were not for the one man-speaking, the rest listening paradigm it would have never been invented!

5. The sermon -- yes! Now there is something scriptural! Don't be so sure! In the Word you see preaching to the lost only and to the believers at certain times only to meet emergent needs and discussion type teaching towards believers but Sunday morning sermons were a transplant of Greek Platonic oratory from the 4th century and it damages the functioning of the members of the Body as far as the functioning of their gifts. I Cor. 14:26 says : "every one of you has ..... " and then mentions various gifts that anyone can have as a believer according to scripture.

6. Stained glass window -- invented by Abbott Sujay in 1400 based on the neo-platonic concept of God being "The All" and too awesome to approach. The buildings were built to inspire awe and produce intimidation of noise from Christians who should "worship in silence!" Well, silence before the Lord is great but, if ,according to Paul the unknown tongues (without an interpretation of course) more killing of the functioning of the members -- too much death here. Steeples -- same thing.

7. "Sunday morning order of worship" --- John Calvin's boring invention from the 1500's . What a curse! Talk about putting God in a box! Poor God!! He's so constricted by our way of doing things that He can't move through any member He wants!

8. Sunday morning worship service being at 11:00 virtually every place the whole wide world! -- this one's funny! It's ALL because Martin Luther used to get drunk on Saturday night and the original "Protestant Mass," as it was originally



called, and which was at 5:00 in the morning moved later and later to accommodate Luther's hangovers on Sunday morning so he could get sober enough to preach! He liked his late Sat nitey talks and German beer. Now here I'm going to take a little time to mention a few more things about pastors because this is one of the most killing things in the Body of Christ today! Show me him in the Bible!!! You just can't do it! OK, maybe just (really just one) one guy is called a pastor in the NT. JESUS is called the Shepherd and Bishop of souls. He is the ONLY pastor, the one and only Head and only CEO anywhere and that's how it should be today but we are like the children of Israel who said to God "give us a king" when GOD was their King! They missed it sooo bad and things got messed up as a result.

The word pastor is found in the New Testament (once only : there is more evidence for the word priest). So, does that mean the present day pastor is scriptural?? Well, the word priest is found in the New Testament also. Does that mean today's Catholic preists are scriptural? Of course not! And that "priest" word is found even more often but that does not mean the Catholic tradition is OK! Jesus Himself said "call no man father, OR lord, OR Rabbi!!!! Sounds like the Lord is not too much into titles! Hmmm!! Now what about those 7 pastoral duties Martin Luther re-hashed for the former Catholic preists who came over or converted to Martin's group over from the Catholic Church and still wanted a "clergy" (a word that comes straight from idolatrous paganism by the way) "job"?

OK then:

Show me a man in the NT that dedicates babies!

Show me a man in the NT that baptizes new converts!

Show me a man in the NT that buries the dead !

Show me a man in the NT that preaches 45 minute sermons every single week !

Show me a man in the NT that preaches these sermons to the same congregation every week !

Show me a man in the NT that preaches these sermons from behind a pulpit on Sunday morning?

Show me a man in the NT that calls the people "my people" "my church."

Show me a man in the NT that's called the head of a church (besides our Lord Jesus Christ)

Show me a man in the NT that is SOLEY responsible for shepherding the flock, taking care of the spiritual affairs AND the business affairs.

Show me a man in the NT that presides over the deacons and the elders????

Show me a man in the NT that is the near "equivalent" of "a church."

You will not find THAT MAN!!! Because that man is NOT in the New Testament!!

There was no such animal (please excuse the expression) in even ANY first century writings, much less the NT. So where did that man come from if he did not come from the New Testament time? He certainly did not come from Jesus Christ! Neither from His era, His generation or His time-frame! And for a fact I know for SURE he didn't come from Christ's eternity-frame !!!! No Way !! The modern pastor came from the Reformation time frame which was when he was invented. Now, where did that man come from? He came from the evolution of the Catholic Church to the Protestant. When the Protestant Church was born: pioneered by a former Nicene monk in Wittenburg, Germany, he took the former priests that converted over and said "OK now we need to change some things" For one thing he dropped the word "priest" because he believed in the scriptural

truth (YES!! At least he did restore some things) of the priesthood of all believers. Also he changed or altered some of the "seven pastoral duties" of a priest which was invented by Pope Gregory the Great who was a very superstitious, medieval type of guy. Some of these duties were to bless civic events (pray over a football game or a presidential inauguration? Maybe? ), also baptize the dead, hear confessions, etc. So one of the ones Luther replaced was that of hearing confessions to preaching sermons. Now guess what this "not priest anymore guy" was called? Not right away of course. But eventually ..... the pastor. And he became the center of events and functions, so forth. He became the center of the what was called (and still is called )the "service" or church service. So then. How did Martin get rid of the mass, the Catholic mass? He got rid of the altar and replaced it with the pulpit (this is a man doing this folks, not God). Then he got rid of the Eucharist and replaced that with the sermon. And the priest was no longer the priest, he was the pastor. The point is very little changed and much of Catholicism remained in this scenario. Especially the clergy-laity system remains, which is what REALLY still undermines the true functioning of the priesthood of all believers. It was the same drama on a different stage. It was still something born of the traditions of men and so there is a killing element in it still.

Today the pastor is the equivalent of the local church. If you remove the pastor from Protestant Christianity then Protestant Christianity collapses. Kapoof!! It stands or falls with the pastor. And that is a contradiction to the NT because the real "pastors" (actually called elders) then played a low-key role and when Paul wrote he hardly mentioned the leaders. There are books where they were written to assemblies with HEAVY problems and any kind of leaders were NEVER mentioned such as I Corinthians. Of course the name pastor is never spoken as a title of any person in the NT except Jesus! BUT TODAY???? The pastor is the center of the local church. So if the pastor was not the exhorting factor and not center stage for taking care of affairs etc, then what was? Well in Paul's writings there is a term used over and over "Eleeron" or something like that and it means "one another" they were to exhort one another, love one another, admonish one another etc. etc. etc. It was written over and over. Also his letters were written to the "assembly in Corinth or Ephesus, etc. It was those who were the "church" or Ekklesia, who did things, took charge or dealt with the situation. Clergy laity relationships were unheard of back then!!

There are probably more traditions through the centuries but you get an idea. So in the 17th century as a result of all of this clergy laity death of the reality of the BODY there was little concern by the ministers of that day about the "assembly life" -- they cared only about saving sinners --- they thought "church" was boring and so it was and that's why if you wanted to be ( it's still like this in too too many circles ) a functioning member of Christ and loved the Lord you would "go to work for Him" ---- they simply had no concept of the corporate expression of Christ as a shining lampstand, Body or Dwelling for his glory -- a Temple built together with living stones. If you wanted excitement for the Lord and of the Lord you need to be in the work of the Lord. Such a one was George Whitfield. What an anointing on that man! Thousands were

saved but no building ..... just a gathering of materials into .... piles?? That man had NO concept of the assembly. He had an orphanage where he kept lots of kids. ( yes I know George Mueller did the same thing in the 1800's a hundred years later and had a much bigger and more famous orphanage with lots of prayer miracles documented but Whitefield was first at it ) He would get his kids in front of his audiences and they would cry crocodile tears and tell the stories of God's miracles in providing for the orphanage etc. and the money just rolled in! THIS was the catalyst for our American Christianity and our countless para-church organizations! We send our young people for summer before college to a mission organization like YWAM etc. overseas then bring them to denomination church services back home to tell their stories and the better stories that are told (there's that platform again! Let's burn the stupid thing down!!! ) the more the money flows. And the more the money flows the more young people are encouraged to go back and get more stories.

The weird but not so weird thing about all this is that an actual taste of what some outside the organized church call "church-life" or Body-life occurs as a result of young people spending time together in prayer and fellowship and the flowing of the Spirit between them as they are together a lot in their mission with other young people etc. Well this started with George and now it goes through billions of dollars and they drain people for these things that have nothing to do with the assembling of God's building ( His rib! ) so they can go back and get more stories, go out and "do a work" and yes! I'm sure things are done to save people and cure some sick ones and feed some hungry children etc. BUT ..... ( I'll comment on that a little later ) .....gathering stones without building them?

Next? Enter: in the 1800's D.L. Moody who actually made George Whitefield's way of doing things to be set in stone. He invented the para-church organization. The name of the first para-church organization was the YMCA: Young Men's Christian Association. These are organizations that are like a vaccination barring people from real assembly life which I've experienced by the way and real assembly life is like rivers of living water, not just flowing in you individually but through many people corporately, deeply and connectedly! THIS IS THE FULL BLESSING OF ETERNAL LIFE ). A vaccination is enough of the virus to keep you from the real thing but young people trip into real assembly life experience in communing together on the beach, in the dorm etc. and trip into it but then trip out just as easy and don't know how it happened or why it slipped away so easy. Therein is its appeal and its testimony. There are thousands of these organizations today. Unknowingly they have replaced the assembly ( Ekklesia ) of Christ. There are literally thousands of so-called ministries that are like my pencil scratching the back to "do what the church has failed to do." So why did George Whitefield and Moody etc. do this? I don't really blame them. It was because they were bored with church! And they were looking for something exciting to do! So they "did the work of God" so they could!

It has been mentioned that Moody died in 1901 and so did Spurgeon the great expositor. Dwight L. Moody gave us the para-church organization. Charles



Spurgeon gave us the expository sermon and since then nothing has happened. Oh there was this great great revival in the early 1900's especially 1904 but there was no leak free container or wineskin to contain and keep that new wine and most of places where the revivals took place though they were turned upside down and in some cases the whole nation would be turned to GOD. .... But .....TEN YEARS LATER THEY WERE JUST THE SAME AS THEY HAD BEEN BEFORE THE REVIVAL. Why? That's easy. There were births but no growths, just births, births, births. How can fish survive out of their natural habitat of water and how can we survive outside of being built together with others as God's Habitat where His table and his food and tender nurturing and all his thousand other riches for our growth in the DNA of God to make us exactly like His Son through feeding, transformation and conformation?

Now .... in THIS last century things have REALLY been done black blindness. This time by someone outside the organized church!!! (they can still be under the Western Mindset influence ) John Nelson Darby who was big in the beginnings of the Plymouth Brethren. But the things he did that took such root in the 20th century were things he did in the 19th century cause that's when he lived. He had true assembly-life among the Plymouth Brethren but held to some doctrines that (having come from the Episcopalian church as a background) perpetuated the clergy-laity system somewhat. Also he stressed Bible study. Believe me when I say this but the world has been so illiterate for 19 centuries (of course THAT boosted the clergy laity situation too I'll have to admit, because emphasis or importance was put on those who "know doctrine" and who had the "best theology" and THIS was another thing Constantine had done by making the "Counsels" for inventing the creeds, i.e. The Nicene Creed, etc. It gave Christians the attitude: you got good doctrine "God likes you", but if you don't "God doesn't like you" and this is how many still think! Because the platonic theory is if you can read and think and you're smarter you're a first class Christian and maybe better than the other "non-thinker" causes you got "theology.") that this (this Bible study thing) could not have got to us before this more (Bible study could never have happened before literacy became widespread because it COULD NOT have happened) literate century which has just passed away 6 days ago. It's the thing now that has happened to us within these last hundred years: "you need to get in the Word." This thing of getting into the Word is not even 100 years old but it is put out as the answer to life !!! People now actually believe that in the written scriptures is actually the answer for your life! What has that old knowledge tree done to us!!! We are being eaten alive by it! Or is it eaten dead? Darby along with John R. Mott invented the home Bible Study! Now, you're going to say "don't tell me you're gonna knock the home Bible study? C'mon, brother!" Well, yep!! I don't even have to think twice about knocking it cause the book of Acts never even mentions such a thing. You won't find it there because those dear brothers gathered around the Person, the dear dear Person of Christ not the book! The answer is not in the book !!!! The book points you TO the Answer Who is Jesus! So what did they do now? They took a verse from here and a verse from there ( from different books of the NT of course ) and proved,

mind you, that ( by this method you can prove ANYTHING ! ) the most important thing in there is twofold: #1: you got to get saved ( a man centered gospel of course ); and #2: after you get saved the most important thing is to get others saved. And now we have a Bible that says exactly that and that is what has been drummed into our heads through proof texts by taking a verse from here and a verse from there, etc. You have been made to feel guilty and bear the weight of the salvation of the whole world upon your shoulders! It also seems like its so hard to get people saved and somehow its my fault as if Jesus was not still a mighty Savior Who can save people at the flip of a dime and THAT's the truth!!!! He is still AN ALMIGHTY ALL POWERFUL AWESOME SAVIOR! HALLELUJAH!!!!!! BUT THAT IS NOT THE MAIN SUBJECT OF THE WORD; IT IS CHRIST AND THE ECCLESIA AND THE FINAL GOAL IS THE LAMB'S MARRIAGE TO HIS SWEET BRIDE, WHICH IS US!!!! THE FINAL 2 CHAPTERS IN THE BIBLE ARE ABOUT THE FINAL GOAL OF THE BIBLE AND THAT IS US THE NEW JERUSALEM, THE WIFE OF THE LAMB !!!!! Get THAT channel , get THAT kind of assembly back and you got a Body once again walking upon this earth that will do what Jesus did through us in the first century when men said "they that have turned the world upside down have come here!" He'll be able to once more shake the earth! And we'll see men with greater anointing than John Wesley or even George Whitefield had! OUR TOO MUCH EMPHASIS ON EVANGELISM BECAUSE OF OUR WESTERN EVANGELICAL MINDSET IS WHY THE WORLD IS NOT EVANGELIZED!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Put the ecclesia 1st by putting love for Jesus Christ corporately first and you'll see BOTH the building up of God's House with His living stones AND the evangelization of this earth happen through every member of his Body! Today's ways of evangelism are a hindrance to the gospel of Christ!! He wants to do things through His Body not us trying to accomplish what flesh and blood can merely do for Him as mere individuals. So ..... whew! Wipe the sweat off, man! Even before I wrote this I felt as if what I wrote here was just to give the Lord a small chance to put a hairline crack if possible ( for Him it is but I don't know if I even got a crack half that big in my own thickly veiled Western Evangelical mind!! ) in your Western mindset so he can pour in light. But I don't feel that what I wrote is really what is needed for bringing in enough light. Rather I would point you to brother Gene Edwards from whom I have learned most of these things. Why? Because there's an article he wrote where he talks about the problems and heartaches of his past as a young pastor and why he's quit that and went on to become a departing church planter. It's in an article called "A Plea for Church Life" at [http://www.homechurch.com/johnzens/ST\\_Edwards\\_Plea.html](http://www.homechurch.com/johnzens/ST_Edwards_Plea.html) Another site which will soon point to the best on these particular topics is Frank Viola's site at <http://www.home-church.org/present/index.html> Very soon there will be a book

printed by him that may be on that site which will for the first time actually provide references to the historical facts of some or most of the things I'm writing about here. Hopefully this will be major breakthrough for the truth and the kingdom of God on this earth!!!





### Addendum 3

#### PROPER PRACTICES; PROPER CONTAINERS

The only answer I've found is not in any concept or in any thought I could ever tell you or anyone else. The answer is in a living Person and knowing Him and maybe your relationship based on who you are, your position in life, your unique relationships with others and society ect., ect., will determine what course you must take to bring His smile not just His presence. What it boils down to really is that only God can help you through being in fellowship with the Lord closely.

So anyway what have I written this addendum for? To share some things why I believe today's ways that Christians do for the most part doesn't work. Maybe(not really maybe but definitely, I'll explain why in the next addendum) this is not the best time to write these things but there are some things I believe and you have a right to know so I will share them. And yes many of these things are in accordance to the standing of the house-church movement (which by the way there are a few things I don't agree with.).

Most of this article is based upon truths as talked about in the book "Toward a House Church Theology" by Steve Atkerson and many other writers. Although I do not agree with some of the things in that book (let me say before ANYTHING ELSE I don't agree with their standing towards the place and function of sisters in God's New Testament economy) this article concerns the things I DO agree with plus some of my ideas added and I think you'll be surprised at my conclusion of the whole matter. I'll give you a hint: consider the background image of this web page and I'll explain the true meaning at the end of this article.

1st, it was a heathen practice to have distinction between clergy and laity because according to I Pet 2 all of us are preists. It was a heathen practice to have the preists dress up in special garb while the common people didn't dress up so much.

The "Lord's supper" was originally a full meal (see I Cor. 11) and all shared not only food but the Lord with one another. Now they pass around crackers(yes in the local church too) so instead of the Lord's supper it is the Lord's snack. And it is not practiced.

What about the term "worship service"? I never liked it cause it sounds too religious and "stuffy." Anyway, you can't find it in the Bible. It suggests that the main and most important thing to Christians and the most important goal of meeting together is to worship the Lord and praise Him. Although I would place worship high and very high on my list it was not the GOAL of a meeting according to Paul. God's goal is to build. I Cor. 14:26. To build up the Body of Christ that Christ may be glorified or made known or testified or revealed however you want to word it. It all means the same thing. That the assembly would be a light set on a hill shining the light of God not by word only but by Christ in us overflowing to the world. That He might be glorified by us built as His Body so He can express Himself: that is God's goal. I'm not talking about my goal or your goal.

If we put HIS goal 1st then I believe He will be blessing us as never before. Of course I Cor. 14 talks about worship as one of the necessary elements of this goal.

2nd, it seems in Paul's chapter about church meetings there is open sharing by ALL Christians because all the saints are ministers according to the Bible (Eph. 4). So I Cor. 14:26 says whoever has a tongue, or teaching or word or song... this means all the brothers or sisters can minister as they really have something from God. He goes on to say let all be done unto "edifying" that means building.

There are lots of things I could say about this chapter. It brings up lots of subjects. Its obvious their meetings were conducted differently than today's. But I would mention that there were many problems in the meetings due to the Corinthians immaturity and emphasizing the use of the more Pentecostal, showy type gifts rather than the gifts of prophesy, wisdom and knowledge which would bring revelation (I COR. 14:30)which is what builds( Matt. 16:17,18). Anyway in dealing with the problem in their meetings he did not take the meeting out of the hands of all the saints and put it into the hands of leaders. In fact in a book which deals with such stunning and awesome problems as they had he DID NOT MENTION LEADERS, ELDERS OR PASTORS EVEN ONCE!!!! He did not even have such a concept in his brain. HE was their leader and it was the letter of an itinerant traveling extra-local apostle which was to deal with their problem and he just didn't even think in the minister-centered way of thinking like we do. In fact it was a necessity of life that an apostle should raise up an assembly and LEAVE that assembly on their own so that all the brothers would learn to function (learn to crawl 1st!)as ministering members of Body which has joints and bands and ministers a supply of the Spirit to one another. Another point: PREACHING DID NOT DOMINATE THEIR NEW TESTAMENT MEETINGS!! That "everyone" could potentially teach, prophesy, exhort, admonish, preach and share a word of wisdom, song, prayer or thanksgiving etc., shows that no teaching was pre-scheduled, but rather the Holy Spirit was in control of those meetings through all the members of His Body. Maybe we would like to argue with these things but to do it another way is not "fitting"! (I Cor. 14:40) God does not give us an option as to how to do it. Paul says this way is the commandment of God (see I Cor. 14:36)and if we ignore it we will be ignored! (Wow! Maybe THIS is why "churches" are so dead today) Too,too, too ,too many customs have come in to take the place of this way but any way it is said "custom without truth is error grown old" and our customs today are so old we just take it for granted that it must be right cause it was that way before we were born but in reality we are the most pitifully disregarding of the truth that any generation that has ever been. In every other century you could not fault the people so much for their blind acceptance of the customs cause in every other century besides this one the majority of people were illiterate and the Bible was not even available to them. So they accepted the Catholic and Protestant traditions most of the time and by the way many of our Protestant traditions we inherited from the Catholics. Contrary to the mere supposition of many: Martin Luther did not make a clean break from Catholicism and he even admitted to this in so many words. Even if he did make a clean break: was it according to the Spirit of God and the Word of God? This we must answer. I answer now! Today's customs are not according to the Word of God!

3rd, I Cor. 16:19 quote: "the church that meets at their house" There is no mention of church buildings. It is easy for people to say what is wrong with meeting at a building? Or what difference does it make or this is a good thing for "the preaching of the Word" etc. but most of the money Christians have given is NOT to itinerate church planters to go evangelize and plant churches but to church buildings.

It is the Catholics who have justified throughout the centuries and (since most church history came from them or was written through them through their religious concept and brain) said that church buildings came from Jewish synagogues and temples so it's not so bad. Well archeology only in the past 12 years has undermined this age-old lie (which most people have forgotten and don't even know about anyway much less care about). They started from Constantine and there were none before that except houses where they met. To this date countless millions have been wasted on these buildings instead of the souls and bodies of men. How outrageous! Should we really put up with this?

4th, What about pastors? This guy is mentioned once in the entire New Testament and the concept is not defined. So what was a first-century pastor really like? What position did he hold? And what did he really do for a living or in the church? I DON'T KNOW. Neither does anyone else who is alive today! But it SURE ain't what we see today cause there is nothing about such a guy preaching endless "eternal" boring sermons (which is another thing in the book of Acts you can't find) to people sitting in rows in a building. The "pastor" is not only not mentioned at all in the whole New Testament story (including Acts), there is no mention of such a man in ALL of first-century literature (2nd century, 3rd, 4th, 5th ect. ect. until the 16th century: we are such geniuses!). Martin Luther invented the pastor cause to his mind mental knowledge and doctrine concerning the Bible were the most important thing. And head knowledge is just about most of the emphasis today not heart knowledge of Christ. And if heart knowledge is talked about....talked about... what about..... I'll leave that sentence for you to finish. What scares me is I don't know how you would finish that sentence. Do you REALLY think there's very many people who know the Lord Jesus very well these days? Are there really any who know Him like John and Peter knew Him?

5th, Then what about the "authority" of the pastors. I got to say this right or I may offend you. The way it seems to be right now I may offend you anyhow no matter what I say. So anyhow, all people agree (who believe the Bible, that is) that Jesus Christ is the Head of the church but how does it flow down from there? Hmmmm ...Well in Acts 20:17: Paul says "the Holy Spirit has made you overseers" to a group of elders who he had ordained (not just one man nor was there one head man among these men, but a group of men in Ephesus) at some earlier date by the laying on of his hands. By the way the house church movement does not always see the necessity but it is in the Bible that an extra-local traveling apostle who never stays at one place for more than 2 or 3 years HAS to actually physically lay hands on and ordain them or it is not I.A.W. the scripture. As to this point I think the Bible makes this clear and explicitly tells us we must do things according to the apostolic examples, patterns and traditions: I Cor. 4:16,17; 11:1,2; Phil. 3:17; 4:9; II Thess. 2:15.



I think everyone agrees that the kingdom of God is a theocracy ruled by Christ through His written word and the influence of the Holy Spirit: JN. 14:25-27; 16:12-15; Acts 2:42; Eph. 2:19-22; I Tim. 3:14-15. But who are the leaders under Christ? Well, of course the scripture says in I Cor. 14 that Christ has set apostles 1st in the church. Secondly, prophets. In Acts 14:23 the apostles returned to each church in the Galatia province(notice that those churches were without human leaders of an official kind until the apostles returned to their city 2-4 years later. They ALWAYS did it that way. So should we. They always LEFT those churches. So should we.)to ordain elders "in every assembly." In Titus 1:5 Paul told his fellow sent one to ordain elders in every city. It was always a plurality of men not just one man in charge. One man in charge is man's tradition.

So what about their authority? Recently in America alot of people have been hurt by the so-called "authoritarian movement." Now I don't know everything about it but they used certain scriptures to say that leaders have authority even over your dress and certain mundane things of common ordinary life, ect. On the contrary Jesus said that the one who rules among us has got to be as the youngest and as the lowest servant. This is not supposed to be the way we think. In other words they are not there to tell people what to do but to be an example of humble serving. Interestingly enough the word "authority" in Greek which means absolute authority over others is "exousia" It is only used of those who also really have "dunamis" which means power. God, Christ, the Holy Spirit, angels and demons. The list of those who have authority extends to certain other individuals who may or may not have 'dunamis' power: police, government officials and parents. In addition believers (who have 'dunamis power') have authority over demons and evil angels. Also believers are said to have authority over diseases and various facets of their lives such as eating, drinking and being married (I Cor. 11:10--I know you don't need scriptures over the other things) BUT there is not a single scripture that uses the word exousia concerning one believer having authority over another believer! Even more striking than this: there is not anything concerning such a concept in the whole N.T.! The word is only used of Paul in II Cor. 10:8 & 13:10 in giving him authority to build up not (hopefully) to tear down. Of course we ought to listen to such a one and the Lord's authority passes through such a one but Paul's authority was not something "over" other believer's rather it was "for" a purpose or rather to do something concerning them. Now what about us obeying church leaders? Well the scripture tells us to obey government (of course if faced with a choice of obeying that or God in case of a contradiction we must obey God, yet even then with a submissive attitude towards government)and it tells children to obey their parents but if we as believers are to "obey" church leaders (who by the way were told by Peter in I Pet 5 not to be lords over the flock but rather examples: proper examples)then the Bible studiously avoids saying so!!!! The word hupakouo which is the Greek for obey is used however to obey God, the gospel of God (Rom. 10:16) and the teaching of the apostles(Phil 2:12; II Thes. 3:14 - the teaching of today's "apostles" had better be according to the scriptures or it should NOT be obeyed!) and of course that includes the whole N.T. which has NOTHING about obeying church leaders!!! So what about Heb. 13:17 and the word translated into our English word obey?

Well this word and its true Greek(peitho) meaning is "let yourself be persuaded by" or "have confidence in" so we are to let ourselves be *persuaded* by our leaders. This of course means they should be respected by us and the respect is something earned because they have earned it by having more experience of life and Christ than most of us. Of course "persuaded" in the Greek means a two way conversation where you throw things back and forth and it doesn't mean absolute obedience to them but rather that we would lean to listening to them and taking counsel into serious consideration. It is not mindless acceptance but based on listening entering into discussion with them. The other word "submit" in the same verse is not the usual word usually used in Greek (hupotassomai) which means to get under an organization or person and is used in Rom. 13:1 of government (also Col 3:18 & I Pet. 2:13,18) etc. but rather the word is hupeitko which is used only in this verse! And it connotes not a structure to which one submits but a battle after which one yields! The image and real meaning conveyed is one of serious discussion and interchange after which one party gives way. This goes perfectly along with the other word in the same verse about letting ourselves be persuaded by. This is not mindless and you can't say that leaders are always right in each case. So anyway they have to constantly earn their respect. This is probably the reason why James said there should not be many teachers and you shouldn't desire to be one because not many know what the heck they are talking about and James said they will receive greater condemnation. This is true or it should be true. I don't believe that this is only condemnation from God but from people who will be watching such a one and checking him out and judging his teaching etc. Of course the persuasive power (and that's all they got) depends on truth and truth only.

So say we start changing our ways and ideas IAW what I've been writing here? Wouldn't this be more pleasing to the Lord and in accordance with what I wrote in the Lost Keys Trek about taking a shower before spiritual activity in the rack? OK, sure ... but ... then what? To have the concept that the things I have just written of is the NT wineskin is to put our Christian life in a basket. So now hear the mystery of the background of this web page: TO MERELY CHANGE OUTWARD PRACTICES TO SO-CALLED "NEW TESTAMENT" PRACTICES IS NOT GOING TO EVEN **HOLD WATER MUCH LESS THE WINE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT!!!** It is like merely changing the old wineskin for a basket. To see the missing ingredient, read my next article in [addendum 4](#) on "The Crux of the NT" which asks the question: are you *sure* you're on the right train??? The new wine skin is not merely NT practices but the REAL NT fellowship and reality of Christ! Now, it IS true that the OLD formal and dead practice of today's Christianity will kill the NT reality but to begin with I have found there may be more of that NT reality in the hearts of those within that tradition than among those in the house church movement of today. May the Lord have mercy on us.

## ADDENDUM FOUR

### THE CRUX OF THE MATTER OF THE NEW TESTAMENT AND ASSEMBLY LIFE

Are You Sure You're on the Right Train????

Are you on the right train? Where are you going? Of course this partially depends on what your goals are. I hope that at least the goals of the Lord Jesus Christ would also be yours. But this article is written in the hope that somehow you would see that to find the path that is on the same page as the very goals of the Lord Jesus Christ is very hard to come by in this dark age and darkest of generations. There are so many motives of the heart that God has to sift through. If you heard the sound wave as you clicked onto this page the lady says "Tickets please ... tickets please." No matter what train you may have gotten yourself onto either intentionally, unintentionally or wrongly with the best of intentions - it cost you something to get your ticket. But are you on the train that is going to the God's goal, the New Jerusalem? Is your destination the same as His? Another good question is do you know the way? Does the engineer at least? Is your engineer (Engineer??) the pastor or the Great Shepherd? Do you have the right ENGINE aboard your train with enough horsepower and fuel to make the journey? Well, that's what this writing is about.

I was going to write this while I was still in Japan years ago and didn't have time as I was preparing to go on leave. In Japan I originally thought this all up. Actually though these ideas are not something directly revealed to me or something I just thought up on my own but in this case are the partially the result of reading Gene Edwards "Overlooked Christianity." Previous to this I had gotten hold of a book put together by Steve Atkerson and others entitled: "Towards a House Church Theology" written by many concerning what the "House church movement" is saying these days and in actuality I have to fault that movement. In other words, even though I did not lie in anything I said in Addendum 3 (concerning some things that were in that book that I really do back up there is still something gravely wrong and I mean gravely wrong with it. It is not really "me." The house church movement has a theology for the basis of their approach to the Christian faith and most of it is based on verses sown together from different passages to prove a point. So if this were the case then why would I write something complimentary about the book? Well because I still agree with what was said in many of the issues brought out by the book and since I do believe it and it is controversial with some beliefs I thought I better see what the reactions of people will be towards it.

Now let me take a minute to say that you absolutely **MUST** stop and realize that if you don't pay some real serious attention to outward practical issues and destroy the pagan traditions of men as far as so-called "church practice" is concerned than you will wind up with a leaking wineskin that will **NOT HOLD** the new wine of the Holy Spirit no matter how much God pours out **IT WILL LEAK!!!!** Please take a minute to read my parable before you go any further: A man had many children who all lived in a new condominium he'd just bought. In that residence he had a new light blue carpet. his kids



(who were quite small at the time) loved chocolate milk which he had there on the 2nd floor in his refrigerator. However they were so wild they had paper cups with holes in them... but they cried out to their Dad to give them the chocolate milk. Well they cried and cried till finally he got angry and went to the refrigerator and got it and threw it at them!!! Now, its not that he didn't want them to have it but he didn't want the carpet to be stained brown either!

Sure if you pray pray pray the Lord will open his night chambers and give you what you ask. But would it not be better to have a new wine skin to contain it? On the other hand you could have all the practices and trappings right and STILL not have what or rather the Who that Jesus shed His precious blood for and if you really love the Lord ALL the way not just your way but want to satisfy the desire of HIS heart and you really mean to have every thing in accordance as HE wants it to be then give HIM WHAT HE WANTS!!! He wants his Body, Building and Bride, not anything else!!!!!! Now here's my proposition of what the real New Testament heart throb really is and please don't settle for anything else. Outward proper practices are important to contain the wine but here is the wine and I have seen some groups that had some of their outward ways wrong but still had this main reality and other groups seemed to have all the practices right but no inner life heartbeat!! In a big sense of the word all the other stuff is stuff that if you could know it and try to do it you still would not have the "real thing" and it would just be something that is like putting plastic apples on a real tree and trying to have a so-called "New Testament church" but it is not the reality that Jesus Himself left in this world. So what is the real thing? God. God is the REAL thing that was left behind by Christ and God wants that quality restored and it has to be up to His standard or the world is not going to take notice. As Leonard Ravenhill once said: "As the church goes so goes the world." No wonder the world is in such a mess! Now is the church going to change and become what she once was in the 1st century? No. But there will be some who come back to the original way and that is good because what God needs is a channel that is just like what He had in the beginning and a loving bride that will fulfill the desire He has in His heart.

So what is the real beginning that was known and spread by the original apostles? Well I don't think it was birthed on verses sown together. Now you may think that I will turn to the book of Acts and tell the story as it really happened and try to tell you like it is: , but it is beyond me. It is not in my grasp. I can only use my weak words. The beginning of the Christian life and the church is not starting at the book of Acts because before Acts is the life of Christ and before the Acts of the apostles there were the acts of the first Apostle: Jesus Christ, and where did His story and His training start? In Bethlehem? Not really. Now.... you may be able to see into my heart and find out something about the real me. Why am I the way I am? Why? Because the first Christian Worker and Founder of the church which is His Body was trained and raised up different than today's workers and preachers are raised up and so were the 12. So where is the real beginnings of these things if it was not in the book of Acts? The book of Acts was just a continuance of the story so it must have begun in the four gospels. Nope. It all started in Eternity past before anything was even made. Go back as many octillion years or centuries as our puny brains can imagine when the concept of "nothing" or "something" did not exist because there was only God and there was no room for "nothing" because He was the ALL and in Eternity future He will be the ALL in all. It took an eternity past of fellowship with the

Father and 30 more years of fellowship and training as a man before He was ready to begin His ministry! That's a lot of time spent in the presence of God! So where was Christian life first lived? In the Godhead in eternal ages. The Father loved the Son absolutely totally ravisly ecstatically adoringly and just poured out with all His might (which is endless) all His care, love, joy and adoration with an endless infinite respect upon the Son. In turn (if such a concept even exists in that timeless realm) the Son returned that same love, worship and lavishly ardent adoration upon His Father with which His Father had poured on Him. Of course the Son told the Father, "I love You soooo(never and ever with more "o's"!!!) much I want someone else to see how wonderful You are!" And the Father told the same thing to the Son and so it was planned and decided that They (or HE) would create.

There was something else (actually there is more that has happened in eternity past than in all the universe and its centuries combined!!!) that happened: the Son, Who was not the first Christian, received His life from the Father (Who was the first Christian) and He learned to live the Christian life and was trained by His Father to live that life by living by the life of His Father not by a bunch of rules. When He became man He DID NOT CHANGE the way He lived the Christian life. He even admitted in John 5:30: "Without MY Father I can do nothing." Later on He told His disciples: "Without Me you can do nothing" in other words He did not live the Christian life by His perfect human life as perfect as it was but He lived it by the life, by the divine life of the 1st Christian: God the Father and it was a life with a different genetic structure. O.K. so wasn't Christ also divine? Yes, but He still could not live it on His own. In fact He said: "I do what I see the Father doing." Now that's a close relationship with God!! Of course, I have barely scratched the surface of the things that took place in eternity past, (!!!) ... events far more marvelous than anything we know or understand as far as events in this time and space existence we have!!!

Where was ecclesia or assembly-life first seen? In eternity past in the fellowship that flowed between the Father and the Son. So where was the first place assembly-life was ever seen (even though it probably wasn't much noticed) on this planet: a carpenter shop! Jesus' compatriots and fellow young men probably decided at 21 to sit under a rabbi and learn the scrolls so they could become a Pharisee, scribe or maybe a priest but Jesus decided to fellowship with His Father in a carpenter shop! Add 30 years of fellowship onto eternity! There the Father trained His Son! Personally! Except here it was in the context and limits of earthly humanity! **THIS HAD NEVER BEEN SEEN ON PLANET EARTH!! NEVER HAD A MAN LIVED BY THE VERY LIFE OF GOD!!!!** Where was church-life seen next? Jesus and 12 men sitting around on a living room floor or hillside! Those 12 men "hung out" with the Son of the Eternal for 3 and a half years! That equals 20,000 hours in the direct presence of God!! Accept no cheap substitutes for producing apostles! Accept no cheap substitutes for producing ecclesia life other than **THOSE** kind of apostles or men with **THOSE** qualifications and those qualifications alone!!! What did they notice the most? His miracles? No! I'm sure they impressed them and they certainly were so amazed at them they wrote much concerning them but that was not the biggest impression. Those outward miracles were merely one kind of outward expression of the inward **BIGGEST** impression His life constantly impressed like a seal upon the hearts of those men. The biggest impression was His loving spotless life. Here I must say that I am not just copying Gene Edwards to say these things but if you'll click



here: (A Vision) later on you can read on how I did have a vision of Christ in his earthly life and not only the disciples but I was impressed mainly by His loving life. Was that all? No. There was something about Him. He was certainly the happiest man and the most perfect they had ever seen but there was more. It was total self emptying love. In fact it seemed He WAS love: love incarnate. Love that could touch and change people so deep within. It was a pouring sort of love! Healing was just a helpless result of such love. It seemed unavoidable in the presence of such love. But there was more! Much more! ALL of this proceeded from His fellowship with an indwelling Father! It seemed the Blessed Vessel He was could hardly contain and pour such an Abundant Ocean that swelled from within!!! And they saw it from day to day! They watched Him like a hawk. Or they tried! There was so much to see!! Far better than television! They watched for mistakes but there were none! What an impression He made on these men even without one flaw even under such close scrutiny! But the Lord would have it no other way. They in this way "learned Christ" This is not the same thing as sitting in a Sunday school or hearing a sermon (what an addiction THAT has become!). They saw His actions, heard His words: even the tone of His voice, saw the way He moved, His smiles at them, His inapproachable and to them, unattainable joy, his inapproachable astounding wisdom, His tears, His sighs, even the way He turned His eyes and they could read what was in them. Do you think they were in love with Him? Yes, some more than others. But some actually hated Him: ... for no reason sometimes.

Day by day they observed how He lived, how He reacted, how He spoke in all situations and how He ministered. They observed Him in every situation and from all angles. Of course they were awed by all of this because they could not copy such a life as He had. This could not be done until after the resurrection when men could be born again. The difference was alot of things clicked and made perfect sense and came home to them as never before and they found that they were able to be like Him cause He lived within. The difference between them and us is that even though we got the same life through the new birth we have not seen what it is like to live by the life of God such as they saw it so we are not motivated to pay the price. We don't know what the lived out divine life is like and we don't know how to live in it and by the way our aim these days is not to live by God's life so that He will be seen and glorified in us; our goal instead is to do a work for God. When some people who wanted to do the miracles He did asked Jesus "What shall we do that we may work the works of God?" Jesus answered: "This is the work of God that you may believe on Him whom He has sent." It was not our works for God that counts with God that no flesh should glory but His works in us and that work is that He may work the faith of Christ in us. Our problem is: we really don't know GOD!

With all this background and all this time spent in the presence of God its no wonder that on the day of Pentecost apostleship was born. So what's next? The ecclesia-life of 13 became 120 and what did they do? They prayed constantly; they were in constant fellowship with the Father and the Son and asking for the baptism, which is the promise of the Father. Then 3000 got saved and God knew they could handle those many and knew that very quickly they could handle even more. Now where did these 12 get the ability to handle so many converts and bring them up right? From the greatest Shepherd of course. All 120 received the Spirit of course but the works of power and preaching and witnessing and ministry is only spoken of in Acts as being done by the 12 for the first 8 chapters. After the 3000 got saved there were 3118 sitting at the apostles' feet watching



them just as 12 had sat at Jesus feet. It took about 6 years before Stephen was raised (in the same way the 12 were raised) and started doing great works of power. Disciples at that time just did not go seeking and doing works of power before they were ready for it. They concentrated on Life. What kind? They wanted to be conformed to the image of the Firstborn Son of God such as Romans 8 says we can be!

Most of their meetings were in all the houses where they were at during most of the times of their life and what were they doing? Seeking God, breaking bread with praises and prayers and fellowship with one another and they were involved with the apostles teaching (by the way the NT states that there should be only the apostles teaching which is now the N.T. and no other.) and the apostles fellowship. And just what did they talk about? Well what would you want to hear if you had been with the 12? A dissertation on Psalms? Or a talk on morality? I'm sure they touched briefly on such matters but mostly they spoke about their time spent with Christ and how He had such a close life with the Father and how all believers are supposed to walk in this age even as He walked. There is not a second way to live the Christian life. What did the 12 do when they were with Christ? Serve God? Nope, the only service they did was for 2 weeks when He sent them out. They sat and watched Him and soaked Him up until Pentecost. Now what did the believers do in Jerusalem the first 6 years? The same thing. They sat at the apostles feet. Only after years and years did a few more apostles or sent-ones get really qualified and raised up and one of them was Barnabas who had been with them from Pentecost but he did not get that status or anointing till Saul of Tarsus got it with him. Now you see 12 trained others to be sent-ones or church-planters however you call it but not till they had been ministering themselves and walking in fellowship with God for years. How did apostles develop after this? The SAME EXACT way as the Father had trained the Son and the Son had trained the 12. Now how did Paul get trained? He spent 3 years (this may be even better than being with the earthly Christ) in the desert receiving revelation from the glorified Christ and sometimes caught up with Him. Then he spent 3 years alone in the struggle of daily life as a Christian in Tarsus learning to live by the Son of God Who had been revealed within him. Then he spent 4 years sitting at the feet of Barnabas (who had sat at the feet of the 12) who raised up the assembly in Antioch, which was as gentile as you can get. The funny thing is it took 10 years (probably it took longer because Jesus was not on earth to raise up Paul but what happened and how was it? It is necessary that a man sit in and be in church life before he could possibly be an apostle or it will never happen and it has to be the type that such qualified apostle's produced or it cannot produce apostles. Until you really feel hopeless and say how can such a thing ever happen on this earth again? you are blind and don't have even a clue of what I am talking about and can't see what it really is that I really mean!!!!!!!!!!

So how about Paul? In Acts ch. 20 we see him training 9 men (8 are mentioned) while they watch him raise up the church in Ephesus where he stayed the longest. This was only after years and years of being an apostle and after the men (who he picked from churches he had raised up by the way and whose names and the churches they came from are listed in Acts 20:4 and on) had themselves sat in church life for years getting to know Christ and growing into His image. Now what was the center and meaning of all this? **THE ETERNAL FELLOWSHIP THAT FLOWS BETWEEN THE FATHER AND THE SON AND THE FLOWING BETWEEN THEM IS THE SPIRIT!!** John proves that this was the center of apostolic ministry in I John 1:1-4. He said that our fellowship is with

the Father and His Son Jesus Christ and this is one of the few epistles which in the beginning does not mention the Spirit because everybody knew that fellowship is the Spirit and His grace in us shared between believers and this is what builds us up. So he says that which our hands handled, we have seen, and heard we declare unto you that YOU may also enter into the same thing. THIS and THIS alone is the Christian life! Nothing else! CHRISTIAN LIFE IS BEING BETWEEN THE FATHER AND SON AS THE FLOWING OF THEIR COMMUNION FLOWS BACK AND FORTH BETWEEN THEM!!!!!! It is that simple. It is that profound. Unless you are living and walking by the Spirit Who is the Communicator and Conveyer of all that the Father has given the Son then it is not the Christian life it is just ethics or Confucius or something of man and something wood, hay and stubble. There must be God's eternal life involved and Christ in you the hope of glory or God has no pleasure in it. NOTHING ELSE COUNTS! Even Paul said this fellowship is of the Holy Spirit in II Cor. the last verse: "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, the love of God and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all. Amen." We can actually experience the fellowship which has taken place will take place and takes place in eternal realms between the Father and the Son! Now how can you have this kind of thing while being in a Protestant tradition sitting silent in a pew? It has to be communicated between brethren! We live far below our privileges in Christ. I'm actually sick of preachers telling young converts you must now serve God and do something for Him. The passion that makes the church live is "that I might know Him" as Paul said in Phil. 3. Out of that and that alone flows all and I mean ALL that is needed for life and service and it hits the mark because it does not fall short of the glory of God. So the fellowship of the Father and Son is the secret and all there is to the Christian life and it IS the church-life (it also IS the oneness: Jesus prayed: that they be one EVEN AS the Father is one with the Son!) also. Yes, its just that simple and that's what I believe but the ecclesia (church is a pagan word that actually connotes a hierarchical system) could only be then and now started in 2 ways and this is the logical result of such a high standard. Only by apostles who had been in this fellowship for years and sat in this high standard or #2 by groups of believers going to another city and starting or rather transplanting the same spiritual reality they had to that city. This is the ONLY 2 ways it happened in the N.T. AND SHOULD BE THE only TWO WAYS IT SHOULD EVER happen now!!!! In both cases the ones who extended had spent years soaking up Christ and growing up into the Head by the ministering of joints and bands and the supply of life throughout the functioning of many members surrounding them and thus grew in the life of God in the normal situation of assembly-life that would to God every believer should be able to experience. But instead of being fellow branches on the Vine with the life sap flowing in fellowship from many members around them (and this is glorious) they are isolated and there is not that kind of relationship of the Body with all members functioning and sharing their inward fellowship to edify one another. I just quoted Eph. 4 by the way. So anyway I hope you can see a little something from my poor words of why I think the way I think.



## A Vision of Christ

One day many years ago, I was presented with a new Bible as a Christmas present. As to why I left the family festivities that day is unclear to me as I do not fully remember my life back then. But this event can never be forgotten as the weight of the sands of eternity are much heavier than those of time. I took the Bible that had been given to me as a gift and started to read in the gospels concerning the life of Christ. But this time the Holy Spirit took control in a remarkable way.

Suddenly it seemed I was there! No! I WAS there as the Lord sat upon a rock, his disciples around Him. He was in front of a huge mass of people who had come to hear Him speak and see His miracles. I was somewhere behind Him as He turned and spoke with His disciples about this and that but I didn't really make out what He might have been saying.

The rest of this experience, I have NEVER been able to describe in human language and I don't know if the Lord will ever enable me to. I have seen or met almost no one who has reminded me of this dear Man except I saw a dim reflection of Him in the late Kathryn Kuhlman whose meetings I have been privileged to attend many years ago. The only word I can use as to what I saw was love. There was no selfishness about Him at all but what love!!! What amazing love! As He looked around at His disciples, what a communication of His love to them I cannot describe. It seemed that to Him each one of them was like the most important person in the world at the time. He was actually joking with them. His laughter and smiles were contagious! There was something going forth from Him that had no self interest - it only went out in love - pure self-less love. I have tried to describe it in the past but the life I witnessed through the Holy Spirit in our Savior was so beyond human language that I'll probably miserably fail again! Only the Spirit of God can reveal Christ to you. I have tried to describe what I saw as being "life giving" --- there is that verse in I Cor.15:45b which says "The last Adam became a life-giving Spirit." His every look, word and smile gave life to His disciples - even the slightest deflection of His eyes gave life! He was talking to one of them, laughing and joking and it seemed two seconds later He turned and looked out over the crowd and though I did not hear any of His words during this part of my vision, my spirit was suddenly reminded of the scripture on how Jesus had compassion on the multitude as "they were like sheep without a Shepherd." Although I was already crying due to the love of God being literally poured through my heart like rivers and springs of living waters, the feeling increased far more as I seemed to be taken into His Being at that time. Though at the same time I was somehow behind Him as He was sitting upon that rock I was also within Him as just a second before He was laughing and joking seemingly carelessly with one of His disciples, but now there seemed to be an upheaval of a tremendous sorrow for those who were "sheep without a Shepherd" and this sorrow was so vast and abundant I wondered where He suddenly got it all as it was like a vast ocean seemingly caring, grieving and longing over every single one of those persons in that crowd!!!

The scene changed! Suddenly somehow I seemed to be taken inside the woman who



had the issue of blood. (there is no way I can be theologically correct on this one OK? Except maybe her blood loss for 12 years corresponded to the little girl Jesus was traveling towards to raise her from the dead after 12 years of life. The point is: we are all leaking life, but Jesus Christ is the Wonderful Life Giver!!) Somehow I guess the Lord was allowing me to experience what she experienced and how she experienced it. On her(my??) hands and knees, struggling through the crowd, getting closer ... and closer ... the atmosphere seemed to turn around, turn upside down even and become unstable as the compassion of Christ took hold of my (her?) insides - it was as if I were in her shoes as she had almost touched the hem of His garment..... but I don't think I ever got that far. I was just reeling and crying and crying and crying as the whole atmosphere seemed to turn somersaults. Jesus is just too wonderful!! Too awesome!!!! Oh! The wonder of it all! The amazing pity! The boundless love! It was then a prayer formed within me: "Lord, I would do ANYTHING, I would give a thousand lives just to have lived back then, just to have been anywhere near this Man. I told the Lord I would have done anything to have lived back then and just been 200 hundred feet from where He was!!! It's no wonder the crowd pressed around Him! It's no wonder thousands flocked to see Him and stayed around Him for days, even after they had run out of food! He is the single most attractive One in the universe! Yet its so strange there were different reactions to Him from the religious ones.

The scene changed again - this time He was healing the sick, laying His hands upon them when suddenly His whole body seemed to straighten up and He just moved like lightning!!! He seemed to say "God is going to touch someone over here! And He seemed to be about ten feet away from where He first was like a flash! As He laid hands upon that person they just broke and cried and cried and whatever miracle was happening to them must have really meant something to them ... but this is not what struck me!! What struck me was that I was inside of Him while this was taking place, was the fact that He was even more excited about this miracle than that person was! He truly loved them more than they loved themselves!!!!!! What selfless kind of love was this?? He was more excited and thrilled than they were! But I had thought "He's God, He's used to miracles, isn't He? No!! He was amazed!! He was thrilled!! Because He loves us more than we do ourselves!!! Do you suppose it was because He was so living?? I have never seen anyone more excited about life and having more fun!!! His life was one mass revival!!!!!! It's no wonder John said of Him the world could not contain the books if they were written of the things that Jesus did and said in that short time He was alive! **BUT THE POINT IS: JESUS IS NOW EVEN MORE ALIVE THAN HE EVER WAS THEN!!!!!!** Where are we????? ..... Where have we been? One of the main points of my writing this is the real Jesus is **NOT LIKE WE THINK HE IS OR WAS!!** This is why to not love Him is so wrong because He is so wonderful. Who would want to withhold this knowledge from others? My point is, no one who really could come to know Him would **EVER** want to disguise or shield this reality from mankind. He is just too too wonderful. There's more than enough for me and for you and for the whole universe!

It took awhile to come back to myself and come down from such a high and there I was: a mess! I had left a pool of tears on my bed and there I was, just sobbing and sobbing, wishing I had only lived back at that time and as I was wondering about it all and praying and meditating a stillness seemed to steal over me and a peace seemed to settle upon me as if a Giant Dove was hovering over me brooding and gently fluttering His wings. I was reminded of the scripture in Genesis where it says "and the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters." Gen 1:2. Then things really got still. Things really got quiet as if there were no noise or movement in the whole universe except for His voice and the hovering of His wings as the Holy Spirit began to whisper to me: "Kevin, I have showed you the life of Jesus ... I want that very life to walk this earth again ..... in you!" Of course my response to what he said was "no way!!!" "No way I could ever be like that! It'll take forever!" At that point He directed me to II Corinthians 4:6 and then verses 10 through 12. But that is not a that but rather it is Him and you and I have that HIM living in us! Oh! If only we did not imprison Him in our human spirit! If only we let Him make His home in our whole heart mind, spirit soul and body! Of course as I read II Cor. 4 later where it says in verse 6 "God who spoke that out of darkness light should shine who has shone in our hearts for the shining forth of the knowledge of the glory of God in [the] face of [Jesus] Christ." This of course corresponded with my experience of seeing the face of Jesus and the love expressed through that face. It also corresponded to God speaking light out of darkness after the hovering of the Spirit of God over the dark depth of the voided and empty human soul. Still there is a deep depth within every man woman and child of a fathomless ocean like depth of capacity to experience the endless abundance of Jesus Christ! Both He and we are much much more than we know!

Verses 10 -12 continue: "10 always bearing about in the body the dying of Jesus, that the life also of Jesus may be manifested in our body; 11 for we who live are always delivered unto death on account of Jesus, that the life also of Jesus may be manifested in our mortal flesh; 12 so that death works in us, but life in you." Death works in us?? Are we ready to pay such a price? Well the Lord obviously wanted me to get in on Paul's secret of manifesting the life of Jesus in his own body. but I'd have to say I've mainly been a failure at this but it's not me is it? It's only Him that has anything. Finally I have learned about contemplation in these later years and it is found in II Cor. 3. I never did even get basic victory over basic sins until I learned the simple practice of "Behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world" (John 1) II Cor. 3:17 & 18 says: "17 Now the Lord is the Spirit, but where the Spirit of [the] Lord [is, there is] liberty. 18 But \*we\* all, looking on the glory of the Lord, with unveiled face, are transformed according to the same image from glory to glory, even as by [the] Lord [the] Spirit." All of this reality and growth can come much more quickly however if we stay in the real assembly life with other God-seekers surrounding us. See the [Lost Depths page](#) to see why.

Copyright © 2001 by Kevin Paul. Non-commercial use permitted.

Kevin Paul  
knwp@betterwithcoastal.com  
***The Revelation of the Lost Keys***

